

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2051: Circumstances Reversed

Chapter 2051: Circumstances Reversed

The Second Prince couldn't understand at all. Yu Yanluo had the Heart-Devouring Demon Spider within her; it could hatch at any time, and if it did, she would be completely controlled by that monster. Then, she would have to do whatever it made her do. Even if she had to do the most humiliating things, she could only obey the order.

However, the Second Prince had always appreciated Yu Yanluo's cooperation. Furthermore, turning such a beauty into a walking corpse just seemed like a waste. That was why he had been more lenient, only using the poison to control her and not directly activating it.

After all, he figured there was no reason for her to go against his wishes. Perhaps she didn't fear death, but if she had to continue living as a walking corpse, being an incredibly stunning woman, there was no way she would be willing to experience that.

Did this woman go mad?

Everyone watching from Primeval Iron City was horrified. They quickly aimed their weapons at the army below, ready to attack at any time.

In this moment of crisis, the Second Prince's subordinates could no longer keep up the act. They all took out weapons from the stretchers and prepared to defend.

The Second Prince cursed all of them for being idiots. At first, he could still have tried to talk himself out of this situation even after what Yu Yanluo said, but now that his soldiers had already drawn their swords, it was too late for anything else.

Sure enough, when he saw that, the Peacock Wise King's expression grew cold. He immediately gave the order, "The Second Prince has committed treason and colluded with the enemy. Execute him!"

Soon after, the giant crossbows and catapults bombarded the army below with attacks. Furthermore, brilliant lights of many different colors rushed at the Second Prince as the cultivators on the city walls sent their techniques flying.

In order to pretend to be wounded, the Second Prince's soldiers hadn't brought that much equipment. Now they had to suddenly fight, and as a result suffered tremendous damage. Many soldiers from the city immediately cheered when they saw that. Only Kong Nanwu looked at the beautiful woman below with a bit of worry. Yu Yanluo was clearly being blackmailed, and yet had still alerted them at a crucial time. The only fate that awaited her was probably death.

When she thought about Yu Yanluo's relationship with big brother Zu, Kong Nanwu quickly tugged on her father's sleeve and said, "Father king, we must find a way to save the Medusa Queen!"

The Peacock Wise King sighed and said, "She is currently inside the enemy camp. The Second Prince is a famous general, and has a lot of powerful experts under him. How can we save her?"

How could Kong Nanwu not know about that? She bit her lip so tightly blood almost came out.

The Peacock Wise King consoled her and said, "Since she made the decision to alert us, the Medusa Queen has clearly prepared to sacrifice herself. We cannot fail to live up to her expectations, and must firmly defend Primeval Iron City for all the Fiend races."

"But..." Kong Nanwu wanted to say something else, but the Second Prince's retaliation suddenly arrived from beneath the city. A large amount of soldiers at the front of the city immediately collapsed. When the Peacock Wise King saw that, he immediately rushed out to provide assistance.

There was nothing Kong Nanwu could do. She could only watch Yu Yanluo's beautiful figure with worry. Even though she was considered talented among her peers, in front of a regular army, it wasn't much at all. There was no way she could save Yu Yanluo.

The Second Prince commanded his army to siege the city. As he watched his subordinates experience bitter casualties, he looked at Yu Yanluo with seething rage, exclaiming, "Why?!"

Yu Yanluo said with a calm expression, "Do you think I should have tricked them to let you into the city instead, so you could lead the Fiend races into eternal damnation?"

“I naturally know you wouldn’t want that. What I’m asking about is, why did you dare to do such a thing? Have you not thought about the consequences?” the Second Prince hissed with a dreadful expression.

Yu Yanluo didn’t reply, and turned back to the sealed land instead; her gaze was full of reluctance.

The Second Prince said with a nasty grin, “In that case, then, you can’t blame me for doing this!”

Immediately after, he took out a whistle and blew an ear-piercing sound. It was the whistle that activated the Heart-Devouring Demon Spider eggs. When he saw Yu Yanluo’s beautiful appearance, he still felt a bit of pity. In the end, this incredible beauty was going to turn into a walking corpse...

However, when he thought about the losses she had brought him, he immediately became more convinced of his decision. As a famous general and someone of tremendous ambition, even though he liked women, he wasn’t perverted. He definitely wouldn’t let women get in the way of his real mission.

This was the only time he had needed to do something like this, as well as the time he had to pay the most bitter price.

Soon after, Yu Yanluo clutched her chest with a pained expression. Her entire body bent over, as if she could fall at any time.

The Second Prince watched her coldly.

You brought all of this upon yourself!

Yu Yanluo groaned in pain, but suddenly, she stood up straight again. Her expression became a bit empty.

The Second Prince knew that the Heart-Devouring Demon Spider had successfully controlled her. He sighed a bit in relief.

Hmph, I’ll send you to seduce the influential figures of the Fiend races to bring them over to my side...

Now that the Heart-Devouring Demon Spider parasite had taken root in her, he didn’t dare to touch her for fear of being unknowingly affected too. Even

though he was collaborating with the monsters, he still didn't completely trust them either. He still had to maintain a degree of wariness.

After dealing with Yu Yanluo, his subordinates had already escorted Little White and Little Blue over. The two young ladies had more or less seen what happened from the back, and they now saw Yu Yanluo's current condition and understood the situation. They couldn't help but sob bitterly.

When he looked at the two tear-stained young beauties, the Second Prince thought to himself that these two young ladies were quite the feast for the eyes, and it would be a waste to kill them. He'd just use them to seduce more bigwigs as well. However, the Heart-Devouring Demon Spider poison was extremely precious, and he couldn't bear to use it on them. He had more than enough other methods to keep them under control. Thus, he ordered his subordinates to withdraw their blades and restrained the two young ladies first, then turned around to command his soldiers in battle.

Suddenly, however, there were a few muffled groans behind him. He immediately became alert and dodged to one side. However, his shoulder was still struck by a fist, making him spit out a mouthful of blood. He sensed that his body had begun to petrify. The Second Prince stared at the exceedingly beautiful woman behind him, exclaiming in shock and anger, "You weren't controlled?"

Yu Yanluo stared at him with glowing golden eyes. The faint smile on her lips really did add a bit of beauty to the bloody battlefield. She replied, "Why, should I have been controlled?"

"That's impossible! I personally fed you that Heart-Devouring Demon Spider back then!" the Second Prince cried out in shock, using all of his cultivation to try and fend off the Medusa Eye.

"It's all because someone gave me a body-protection talisman to ward off parasites," Yu Yanluo said, thinking back to how Zu An had warned her to be careful again and again like an old female servant. A warm smile appeared on her face.

In the past, after Zu An witnessed the viciousness of the Heart-Devouring Demon Spider, he had become worried that his sweethearts would be schemed against, so he'd used the knowledge of the Baopu Sutra and researched how to defend against these parasites using talismans, working with Yan Xiang. However, because these talismans required extremely

precious materials, they couldn't be produced in large amounts, so he could only give them to a few people.

“Even so, I already destroyed all of your protective talismans!” the Second Prince exclaimed, sounding shocked and furious. He was no fool, and had used all kinds of methods to destroy her protective treasures before feeding her the poison.

“You thought you were a step ahead, but Ah Zu was five steps ahead,” Yu Yanluo replied. When she thought about her lover’s wits, her grin grew even bigger. “He was worried that I would encounter similar dangers, so he gave me two kinds of defensive talismans. The one on the surface was there to numb the enemy and make them careless, while the true talisman was inside me. It didn't produce a serious reaction when the bug entered, and instead secretly eliminated it.”

When she recalled how her lover had fed the protective charm to her through a kiss, her cheeks turned entirely red.

Hmph, I was definitely not the only one he gave this talisman to. He probably did it like this to the other women too...

When he heard that, the Second Prince was stunned. After some time, he laughed out of helplessness. “The regent is the bane of my existence after all. I’ve been defeated several times at his hands.”

The Peacock Wise King called out, “Second Prince! You have committed treason and colluded with the enemy. Die!”

He had always been observing the situation, and thus saw Yu Yanluo retaliate. How could he let such a great chance go? He immediately attacked. As long as the leader was taken down, the remaining soldiers would be much easier to deal with. Kong Nanwu wanted to save Yu Yanluo, so she also flew over.

The Second Prince revealed a strange smile, remarking, “Did you really not think I might have been baiting you over?”

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2052: Kilometers of Tombs

Goosebumps covered the Peacock Wise King's entire body. He immediately dodged a few inches to the side.

However, he was still a bit too late, as the Second Prince's entire body burst into golden light. The prince's petrified skin immediately shattered, and he turned into a streak of golden light that rushed at the Peacock Wise King.

The Peacock Wise King cried out bitterly as a mouthful of blood spurted out of his mouth. He was already seriously injured.

When he saw that the Peacock Wise King was lying on the ground without any ability to resist, the Second Prince laughed proudly and said, "I indeed never expected the Medusa Queen to still be hiding her strength, but I immediately reacted to beat you all at your own game, drawing you over. As long as you die, taking over Primeval Iron City will be easy enough. Peacock Wise King, what a great reputation you have! And yet, it only amounted to this much."

After saying that, however, his expression suddenly changed. Golden light appeared all over his body, blasting the area in front of him. Everything around him shattered like a mirror.

The Peacock Wise King was standing in the distance, perfectly fine. Meanwhile, Kong Nanwu was already protecting Yu Yanluo and the two young Snake ladies.

The Second Prince's expression darkened. "People have always praised the Peacock race's eye technique as being unparalleled. Even I was almost affected by your illusion."

The Peacock Wise King was a bit surprised, saying, "You actually broke free from the illusion so easily. This really doesn't match up with your original strength."

After all, in the Fiend races, apart from the unfathomable Ocean races and the late Fiend Emperor, it was him, the Great Golden Peng King, and the Elf King who had the highest statuses. The Fiend races that cared about strength above all else didn't care about the nobility of bloodlines. Rather, their positions were all earned through strength. Furthermore, as the leader of the three great kings, his cultivation was the highest of them all.

Previously, the Second Prince hadn't been on the same level as him at all; and yet now, they were evenly matched.

The Second Prince sneered, saying, "You shouldn't treat the monsters as evil foreigners. In reality, they share a deep origin with us. I learned some methods to activate my bloodline power, and my strength can no longer be compared to what it was."

"Then I'll have to experience your growth properly for myself," the Peacock Wise King retorted. He had his pride as well, after all, and it was a rare chance to fight one on one. If he couldn't take down this junior in such a situation, he would feel quite terrible himself.

As for the Second Prince's troops that flocked over to help, Yu Yanluo's beautiful head of hair turned into snakes that hissed at the incoming soldiers. Soon after, they all turned to stone sculptures. They definitely didn't have the Second Prince's powerful cultivation.

The Second Prince immediately gave the order, "None of you are to come over. Continue the siege!" He knew that Yu Yanluo's abilities were too strange. If he didn't get involved, it would be really hard for the others to do anything to her. Meanwhile, he would only be stalled by the Peacock Wise King.

Realizing that he couldn't afford to waste time, he almost immediately turned into his true Golden Crow form. His wings spread out, immediately releasing his Ardent Sun Sword Formation. Countless blazing feathers turned into flying swords that covered the sky as they attacked the Peacock Wise King.

The Peacock Wise King harrumphed. A streak of rainbow light flickered behind him. As they clashed with that streak of rainbow brilliance, the endless flying swords fell one after another.

The Second Prince wasn't too surprised to see this, and his feathers quickly returned to his wings. Those wings then turned into two several-dozen-meter long blades. His entire body turned into a streak of light, and he attacked the Peacock Wise King from all directions at a speed that was difficult to follow with the naked eye. If it were anyone else, they would likely be instantly cut to shreds. Golden Crow Radiant Flow and Invincible Heavenly Peng were known to be the Fiend races' two fastest movement skills, after all.

Just then, however, the Peacock Wise King's eyes became pitch-black. A golden figure moved back and forth inside. Soon after, he vanished, turning into a streak of green light, and continued to clash with the golden light in the sky.

Just like that, they clashed more than ten times. The streak of golden light struggled free and reformed into the Second Prince. He gave the Peacock Wise King a look and said, "The wise king's eye techniques are unrivaled after all!"

The Peacock Wise King could see through an enemy's openings through his eye techniques, and it could even duplicate the other side's moves. Even though they were much weaker, those copied moves had still been able to fend the Second Prince off, making him feel extremely uncomfortable.

"You overpraise me. Your cultivation should now already be at the level of your father, the late Fiend Emperor. However, if his spirit were watching over us now and he found out what you have done, I wonder if he would come back to life out of anger," the Peacock Wise King said, his tone full of pity. He had watched the Second Prince grow up, and had always seen him as a genius. However, how could he have known that this child would walk the wrong path?

"Hmph, if his spirit were still in this world, perhaps I wouldn't be the first one he went after." The Second Prince harrumphed. He had heard a bit about Zu An and the Second Empress' affairs. When he thought about the young and beautiful empress he treated with respect actually being pressed under another man, he had always felt really awful.

He gave the glaring Medusa Queen in the distance a look, then looked back at his army that had suffered severe damage. After some hesitation, he gave the order to withdraw, saying, "I'll request a spar from the wise king another day."

He had been injured from Yu Yanluo's ambush, and then been attacked by them from both sides. The situation was indeed a bit unfavorable right now. Of course, he had a way to become even stronger through a secret technique, but he still had some reservations toward the monsters. He didn't dare to fully activate the power granted by that side, or else he could accidentally become their slave.

When he saw the Second Prince lead his soldiers away, the Peacock Wise King also sighed in relief. He didn't have any confidence in his ability to make the Second Prince stay here. The prince's strength had improved too fast. He had even sensed a bit of danger. If he pushed the prince too far, even he could die. The Peacock race's eye technique was extremely magical; since he could see death, he naturally wouldn't dare to disbelieve it.

As such, both sides silently decided to give up and allow the opposing force to retreat.

Kong Nanwu just assumed her father was worried that Primeval Iron City's troops couldn't win against the Second Prince's seasoned field army if they left the city, so she didn't oppose the decision either.

Soon after, they brought Yu Yanluo and the two young women inside the city. They asked about the events within the sealed land. When they heard about the dangers the Second Empress had experienced, they were incredibly nervous. When they heard that the regent was already heading out to save the Second Empress, however, they felt a bit of relief. It seemed they all had tremendous faith in Zu An's ability.

...

"Achoo!" Zu An sneezed as he moved through the endless snowstorm.

Who is thinking about me now?

He had already arrived at the place directly to the north. It was just a small spot on the map, but when he arrived in person, the whole place felt vast and endless. However, he had already searched this entire place once without finding any seals. Instead, a group of strange, small mounds rested within. These mounds were everywhere, stretching across several kilometers.

At first, Zu An had thought that they were just hills, but he soon realized that something wasn't right. Whenever such snowy lands had elevation, it took the form of extremely tall snowy mountains and glaciers. How could there be such short piles of snow?

When he got closer, he noticed that next to the snow piles, there were some weapons embedded in the ground in groups of two and three. Most of them were already buried under ice and snow. Only a few spear-type weapons still had their tips exposed. He cleared away the nearby accumulated snow, and

then he finally realized that these were no hills, but rather snow piled over graves.

After some hesitation, he cleaved open a snow tomb and saw a fiend soldier's corpse. Even though countless years had already passed, the corpse was still vivid and lifelike. He even saw fatal claw marks on the soldier's lower back that reached all the way to the bone. When he examined the soldier's weapon and attire, he discovered that they weren't what the Fiend races currently used, but rather an older style from thousands of years earlier.

Zu Am immediately felt a deep sense of veneration. These were likely left over from the battles of the Fiend races' soldiers against the foreign monsters. Many soldiers who died in battle were buried locally, but history had proven that they were the final victors. They had been able to seal the monsters away. Still, so many brave soldiers had been silently sacrificed here.

He closed the tomb again. His tone was extremely apologetic as he said, "I'm sorry for disturbing senior's rest..." He took out a pot of wine and poured it around the surrounding simple and crude tombs, continuing, "Seniors, once I seal these monsters again, I will definitely come to bring all of you home."

As he looked at the endless graves, his mood was especially grave.

After walking for a long time, he suddenly voiced his surprise. He turned around to look at the snow tombs, muttering, "Hm? Something doesn't seem right..."

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2053: Spark

Zu An quickly returned to his original spot. With a wave of his sleeve, an invisible wave of energy brushed past the many years of built-up snow, revealing a dozen or so tombs underneath.

His gaze landed on the weapons stabbed into the dirt. They included swords, blades, spears, bows, and other weapons. However, the unusual thing about them was the amount. There were some graves that only had a single sword, while others others had blades, spears, swords, and bows.

If they were normal tombs, perhaps such a thing could signify that the owners' statuses were different, causing a difference in their burial goods. However, these were soldiers who died on the front lines. They had clearly been buried hurriedly under ice and snow so they wouldn't just be sitting out in the open. People absolutely wouldn't bother to treat them differently in such a situation.

If they were provided different burial goods, wouldn't the soldiers all be bitterly disappointed, too? In theory, the tombs would normally have carried the weapons they used when they were still alive. Perhaps some soldiers would use both a blade and a spear, but why would they have bows and arrows too? Furthermore, there were some blades and spears of different styles too.

With Zu An's present cultivation, he keenly sensed that these blades and spears couldn't possibly have been used by the same person. In that case, the weapons had to have another special reason for being here. Thus, he swept clear another area of snow, revealing even more tombs.

After investigating them, he discovered that the appearance and style of the weapons weren't what mattered, but rather the number of different types of weapons. All of the blades, no matter how many of them there were next to the tombs, could be considered one type; so could all of the spears, all of the swords, and so on... Additionally, the types of weapons next to the tombs increased in order from one to nine, with nine tombs forming one set. The sets seemed to be arranged together like a kind of formation.

Earlier, when he opened up the graves, the weapons next to them seemed to have been shining with a weak light, but it had quickly faded.

After taking a moment to think to himself, he walked up to a tomb with just a single sword. A fine streak of ki cut open one of the graves. Sure enough, the sword lit up. Then, he walked up to a tomb that had two types of weapons... Just like that, the tombs lit up one after another until nine tombs were lit up.

Zu An sighed in relief. Even if an ordinary person just happened to light up one or two of them by accident, if they didn't follow the patterns, the lights would quickly fade away.

As the nine tombs lit up, a vibration came from the ground as if there were an earthquake.

Zu An rose into the air and looked down at the snowy tombs. Soon after, he followed another special sequence and lit up some tombs. The entire

snowfield suddenly emanated streaks of blue lines. Then, a giant formation began to appear in the snowfield.

Zu An was pleasantly surprised. This had to be a formation the ancient Fiend race ancestors set up! The way to use it had probably been left with the Fiend races, but as time went on, the things they left behind had gradually been lost. There were likely only some fragmented legends left behind here and there. That was why he had only been able to arrive at this place after many officers shared and discussed their intelligence together at Mengte City.

Fortunately, he had learned the Baopu Sutra and was familiar with formations. He wasn't too stupid either, and was able to activate this ancient formation through trial and error.

Just what did those fiend seniors from back then leave behind?

He stared at the formation that gradually took form on the surface. His expression suddenly changed. This seemed to be a Soul Capturing Formation! Such a formation was extremely treacherous. The souls of the creatures who died here would never be able to transcend! Was this a formation left behind by the ancient Fiend races or the ancient monsters?

Suddenly, a drone filled the air. The weapons next to the tombs trembled. At first, it happened in an extremely small range, but the vibration soon grew more and more intense. The snow that had accumulated for many years also began to break apart bit by bit, revealing the original forms underneath.

Weapons flew up one after another, then moved toward set graves. They flew in circles while releasing waves of cries. Immediately after, the surroundings became extremely cold. This world of ice and snow was already extremely cold, but now, it had become even colder. It wasn't just a chill in the physical sense, but rather one that came from the soul.

Soon after, figures rose one after another from the tombs. Even Zu An shivered a bit, because he saw the person from the tomb he had opened up earlier also standing up. However, he quickly calmed down. These seemed to be the souls of the ancient fiend soldiers. What kinds of beings hadn't he seen before in the different secret dungeons he had visited in the past? Ghosts weren't all that strange.

The soldiers' spirits all turned to Zu An just then. They muttered, "You are not a descendant of the Fiend races; you are a human, an enemy. Exterminate..."

As they spoke, their weapons pointed straight at Zu An. There were countless weapons everywhere, all surrounding Zu An at the center.

“Wait! I am the Fiend races’ reg...” Zu An began, but before he could even finish, the spirits already entered their respective weapons and attacked him from all directions.

Zu An darted around like lightning, barely dodging the attacks. Unfortunately, there were too many weapons, and these soldiers’ cultivations in life weren’t low. At the very least, they were far stronger than the elites the Second Empress commanded. Eventually, he had nowhere to escape. Ten thousand swords were about to penetrate his heart when a great golden bell suddenly appeared. The weapons were all deflected when they made contact with the bell’s surface.

But this wasn’t the original Tranquility Bell in the end, and there were too many weapons. Right now, it was as if he was facing an entire army. Cracks quickly appeared on the bell, and it would clearly be destroyed soon.

Zu An was getting annoyed from being one-sidedly beaten down. With a harrumph, he used the Primordial Origin Sutra. A streak of white light appeared around him. As soon as the weapons approached, they suddenly cried out in fear and quickly flew back. White smoke came out from their bodies as if they had encountered something terrifying, to the extent that some of them lost half of their soul bodies.

Then, the weapons all stopped, not daring to crazily attack like before. Zu An said with a sneer, “Come at me! Why are you all stopping now?”

He flew at the weapons as he spoke. However, they acted as if they had seen a ghost and flew away. It really was quite a strange scene. Just then, countless weapons had cornered Zu An alone, and yet now, Zu An seemed to be the one cornering countless weapons. Wherever he went, the weapons scattered away and hid.

Zu An sneered. He wasn’t necessarily invincible against other enemies, but defeating the dead was too easy. The Primordial Origin Sutra’s purification effects were their natural bane.

After he chased them continuously for a while, a strange flying sword suddenly flew out from among the weapons. The sword wasn’t straight; rather, its blade was wavy. It was dark-colored, and there were signs of rust on it.

However, the other weapons seemed to respect it a lot. All of them moved aside respectfully in its presence.

A spirit dressed in full armor and a helmet, who seemed to be a general, flew out from the strange sword. It bowed to Zu An and asked, "What kind of relationship does your distinguished self have with our Fiend races?"

"You didn't even hear me out and started attacking me, but you're now here to be friends?" Zu An retorted coldly. This general's strength didn't seem to be low. If not because his Primordial Origin Sutra was perfect for countering him, winning wouldn't be that easy.

"It was indeed our side that was wrong earlier. But after being trapped for so many years, we could not help but develop a bit of vicious intent. When we saw that your respected self was not from the Fiend races, we naturally treated you as an enemy and attacked," the general said with an embarrassed laugh.

"Then you're not treating me as an enemy anymore?" Zu An replied in annoyance. He hadn't expected that this general would still bully the weak and yield to the strong even after turning into a ghost.

"That is because your respected self's cultivation is clearly powerful, and you have a way of severely wounding our soul bodies, yet you still held back and did not endanger our lives. That was when I realized that your distinguished self was not an enemy, but a friend," the general said in a serious tone.

When he saw that the general's attitude had become much better, Zu An couldn't really act up anymore either. He said, "I have indeed been entrusted by the Fiend races with the task of locating the sealed land by investigating several possible locations. However, from the looks of things, the sealed land is not here."

"Did something bad happen to the sealed land again after all?" the general asked, seemingly having already anticipated this happening.

"You don't seem to be too surprised," Zu An said; in fact, he was the one who was a bit surprised.

"In the past, the high priest prophesied this day, so we were left behind here to wait for the day when our descendants came here. Then, we would dedicate our lives one last time to the battlefield," the general said. He

seemed a bit hesitant as he asked, "May I ask how to address your distinguished self, and what kind of relationship you have with the Fiend races?" He quickly added, "It is not that I do not believe your distinguished self, but rather that this is related to the prosperity and decline of the entire Fiend races, as well as the survival of this world. It really is hard for me to imagine why our descendants would send a human to this place."

"I am the Fiend races' regent. There is no candidate more suitable for this than me," Zu An replied.

"Regent?" the general repeated, stunned. The other weapons also vibrated with noise, as if they were whispering with each other. This was completely beyond their imaginations. Why would a human become the regent?

The general had a look of grief as he asked, "Could it be that our Fiend races have already been dominated by the humans?"

Zu An knew the general was overthinking things and said, "That's not it at all. I just happened to end up in this position." Then, he tossed over his regent token.

The general received the token and gently caressed it. Soon after, streaks of faint light appeared on the patterns. The general nodded slightly and said, "This is indeed the true inheritance of our Fiend races." When he heard that the Fiend races hadn't been taken over, he sighed in relief and returned the token, asking, "May I ask how your respected self became the regent?"

Zu An was getting a bit impatient, replying, "Are you all done yet, interrogating me again and again? I still have more important matters to take care of with the monsters invading, and I don't have time to chat idly with you. You're the ones who should be talking. What are you doing here?"

The general chuckled in embarrassment and said, "I was wrong. After not talking with another for so long, I could not help but become a bit long-winded." Then, his expression became serious as he explained, "In the past, the high priest predicted that a great disaster would befall the Fiend races, and the entire world could be destroyed. That was why we were willing to have our souls eternally trapped in these weapons in hopes that when the day came, we could serve as the spark for the Fiend races' counterattack."

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2054: Traitor

Zu An's expression immediately became respectful. He said, "You seniors willingly sacrificed yourselves for a prophecy that might not have come to fruition, and let your souls be trapped within ice and snow for thousands of years. It truly is admirable."

The general soul waved his hand as if he was a bit embarrassed, saying, "It was merely our duty."

Zu An couldn't help but ask curiously, "Just which great master managed to foresee this distant future through a prophecy?"

"That would be the Venerable Master of the Imperial Gate, so no one doubted him," the general said in a serious voice.

Zu An was surprised. There was only a single Venerable Master of the Imperial Gate, and that was Imperial Gate Bei Qing. He had been the strongest Yin Yang Master in the Fiend races' history, and he was rumored to have even been able to communicate with supernatural beings. There were still many legends related to him among the Fiend races. The Fiend races' youth had all grown up on his stories.

"May I dare ask general's esteemed surname?" Zu An asked with a bow. The prophecy and arrangements of Imperial Gate Bei Qing were extremely formidable, but these soldiers' sacrifices were even more deserving of respect.

The general only raised his head toward the sky, saying, "What was my name... It has been so long that I no longer remember..."

The other souls were also at a loss.

Zu An became silent. It seemed the passage of time really left these souls with irreversible damage. After some time passed, he asked, "By the way, what kind of divine artifact was left here in the past?"

The general waved his hand, and the sword that looked a bit damaged and dull appeared in his hand. He said, "It was none other than this Skycloud Sword."

Zu An was stunned. This sword did look a bit special, but it still looked far inferior to the Tai'e Sword, Sun Slaying Bow, and Human Emperor Seal. It didn't carry the terrifying pressure the other divine weapons had at all. He asked suspiciously, "Just this sword alone is enough to defeat those monsters?"

"This sword alone is naturally not enough," the general said as he gently caressed the sword, seemingly reminiscing about many things from the past. "Three divine weapons need to be combined together in order to seal off the monsters again. Apart from this Skycloud Sword, there is also the Soulhook Jade and the Ninefoot Mirror. In the past, as a preparation against the unexpected, the Venerable Master of the Imperial Gate separately arranged these three divine weapons in three different locations. The three artifacts could only be gathered again by following the clues left behind with the Fiend races' descendants."

Zu An was surprised. These three divine weapons had been placed in three different locations, and the Fiend races' upper echelons just happened to have decided on three locations after gathering and sharing their information. It seemed those were the locations of the three divine weapons.

"May I ask senior just how we can seal those monsters? The seal has already been damaged quite badly, and many powerful monsters have already escaped the seal," he said worriedly.

The general's expression was serious as he replied, "This is also precisely the reason why we old fellows stayed behind here. You can leave those monsters to us. As for the destroyed seal, once you gather the three divine weapons, you will naturally figure out how to fix the seal once more."

"Then what if I bring away this sword? Will you be affected?" Zu An asked worriedly.

He could sense that these souls seemed to have a certain deep connection with the sword. After all, a formation couldn't be made out of thin air. There needed to be something like a formation core. Something that could keep the souls of so many powerful creatures here would naturally need to be

extremely powerful. Here, it seemed to be none other than the Skycloud Sword.

“It doesn’t matter. This is already our home,” the general said before continuing, “Just take this sword with you. When you need to, use this sword to call us, and we will be summoned to you and help you fight against the monsters.”

After saying that, he once again gently caressed the Skycloud Sword, as if he was a bit reluctant. However, in the end, he still tossed it to Zu An and said, “Take good care of it.”

Zu An was stunned. He reflexively caught the sword and was about to say something, when he suddenly clutched his head and groaned in pain.

“Hahaha! He believed us? He actually believed us?”

The ghost soldiers' blank expressions faded, replaced with cruel and strange smiles. Their faces looked especially twisted.

The general who seemed to have had a righteous and noble air had a strange smile on his face too. His hands opened up, and he floated into the air. He closed his eyes and revealed a look of enjoyment, as if he was welcoming the feeling of freedom. He exclaimed, “Just how long has it been? We finally have a chance to leave.”

As he spoke, endless darkness appeared from the Skycloud Sword. Every single shadow was a fiend soldier's soul, but all of their expressions were really warped. They rushed at Zu An, as if they wanted to drag him down into hell with them.

Suddenly, Zu An remarked with a sigh, “This is the plan you’ve thought of after thousands of years?”

The general was stunned. A look of disbelief appeared on his face as he exclaimed, “How is that possible?! Even though you're strong, there's no way you could endure the attacks of over ten thousand souls all at once!”

“Oh, are you talking about this sword? I didn’t touch it,” Zu An said, raising the sword in his hand. Only then did the general notice the black energy at the center of Zu An palm. There was a small gap between the palm and the

sword. If one didn't look carefully, one wouldn't notice that he hadn't actually caught the sword.

The black souls quickly rushed at Zu An's body. However, he harrumphed and a streak of white light suddenly flickered around him. The vengeful spirits were like leftover snow meeting the blistering sun, white smoke coming out of their bodies as they dissipated into nothingness.

"How did you know that I was scheming against you?" the general exclaimed, glowering at him.

Just now, Zu An had clearly looked incredibly moved after listening to the general's story. Also, judging from Zu An's reply, it definitely sounded as if he believed it. That was why the general had planned to use the moment when Zu An's hands made contact with the Skycloud Sword to send ten thousand vengeful spirits straight into his sea of consciousness. No matter how strong he was, there was no way he could react in time, and he would only be forced to let his mind be destroyed by countless vengeful spirits.

Zu An looked at him and said with a sigh, "I already suspected you when I first found out that you were trapped here for ten thousand years."

"Why? Could it be that there was something wrong with our behavior?" the general asked with a frown.

"No, your performance was quite perfect," Zu An said, shaking his head. "Unfortunately, it was just too perfect."

"What do you mean?" the general asked; he and the other soldiers looked confused.

"Since you still retained your previous consciousness, you would likely have still retained your emotions," Zu An said as he looked at them. "When I thought about how I would feel if I were in your situation, even if I had been willing to stay here in the distant past... After all this time passed and I was trapped here all this time with only wind and snow to accompany me, without any Fiend race descendants making any offerings, I would probably be full of resentment. I might even have been driven mad by the endless passage of time. There would be no way I could still keep the same intentions I had at first."

“That’s all?” the general replied. He didn’t know whether to laugh or cry right now. “Since we were willing to make the sacrifice for the Fiend races, we would naturally have resolute wills and be fully committed. How could we possibly end up like that?”

Zu An chuckled. He didn’t feel like arguing about that, and continued, “Of course, that wasn’t all. I asked you for your name, but you said you’d already forgotten.”

“Too much time has already passed. It’s natural for me to have forgotten my name,” the general said, remaining expressionless.

“And yet you still remembered Imperial Gate Bei Qing’s name,” Zu An said as he looked into the general’s eyes. “Someone who already forgot their own name, still remembering someone else’s name? That would either mean it was an enemy they hated bitterly, or that they were deliberately hiding their own name for fear that the other side would be on guard if they found out. Either way, there was clearly an issue.”

The general’s expression gradually became a bit distorted as he exclaimed, “It was just because of these groundless accusations that you doubted me?”

“Of course, that wasn’t all,” Zu An said as his gaze shifted to the endless tombs below. “You might not have known that I just happen to be quite proficient in formations, and recognized that this was the extremely treacherous Soul Capturing Formation. If you really were heroes devoted to the Fiend races, how could Imperial Gate Bei Qing use such a vicious method to keep your souls here?”

“So you already suspected us from the very start. Then why did you still converse with us pleasantly like that, as if you were really moved?” the general asked, grinding his teeth. Just a moment before, he had been laughing in ridicule, thinking that this guy was completely fooled, and yet he was the real clown all along.

You have successfully trolled Shi Bingxiu for +999 +999 +999...

Zu An was startled.

So it was him.

Shi Bingxiu was a famous traitor of the Fiend races. In the past, during the great war against the monsters, he had been a coward who led his troops in abandoning their commander-in-chief, creating an opening in the army's flank. The army had almost been completely wiped out. Fortunately, the exceptional genius Imperial Gate Bei Qing had appeared with his extraordinary abilities and barely reversed the situation, managing to avert a tragic end for the Fiend races. After the matter, Shi Bingxiu's troops had been brought to justice and executed by martial law. He was the Fiend races' most famous traitor. Even young children knew of his story, so it was no wonder he wasn't willing to mention his own name.

"I just wanted to obtain some intelligence from you as quickly as possible. If I hadn't fooled you, how could you have shared some pieces of the truth with me?" Zu An replied with a chuckle. Since Shi Bingxiu had wanted to fool him so badly, he would naturally have decided to tell mostly the truth with some lies mixed in. As long as Zu An figured out which parts were lies, the rest would be all truth.

Shi Bingxiu finally couldn't handle it anymore, exclaiming, "Then just use force against us! Even though your ability restrains us, how can you defeat an entire army all by yourself?!"

As soon as he said that, countless weapons rose into the air.

Shi Bingxiu hissed through gritted teeth, "Kill him!"

You have successfully trolled Shi Bingxiu's army for +999 +999 +999...

Then, the weapons all rushed at Zu An.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2055: Ruined Temple

Zu An had already been prepared ahead of time. Ripples appeared behind him, and all of the weapons in front of him were duplicated. When the endless armaments clashed against each other, even though the ones he created were a bit weaker than the original, it wasn't to an overwhelming extent.

Zu An took the chance to say, "There's no way Imperial Gate Bei Qing went through all that trouble just to trap your souls here. He must have ordered all of you to do something to atone for your crimes, right?"

He'd been about to use the Primordial Origin Sutra to completely purge all of the spirits, but he quickly realized that if that happened, he'd just be letting these traitors off easy! Imperial Gate Bei Qing definitely had a purpose behind his actions.

Sure enough, when he heard what Zu An said, Shi Bingxiu's expression became conflicted, as if he was engaged in some kind of internal conflict.

The Tranquility Bell's projection appeared around Zu An again. At the same time, streaks of clear light appeared, and many formations appeared around him. He continued, "Do you really think you can win against me?"

Shi Bingxiu remained quiet. He was feeling rather discouraged, actually. He really wondered just where this absurdly powerful guy had come from. Of course, if Zu An hadn't had a skill that just happened to counteract their soul bodies, then with the army behind him, Shi Bingxiu wouldn't be all that scared. However, with all these disadvantages stacked against him, there really was no fight left to be had.

When he sensed that Shi Bingxiu's will was being shaken, Zu An gave him one more push, saying, "If I'm not mistaken, if I kill your soul bodies one more time, you might never be able to transcend, right?"

When they heard what he said, the weapons also began to hesitate. Normally, if you died, then you died, but now that they knew that there was another world after death and that perhaps they would never be able to pass on, didn't that mean they didn't even have the slightest future left?

When he sensed his subordinates' wavering will, Shi Bingxiu finally said, "You win. Back then, Imperial Gate Bei Qing told us that we needed to fight for the Fiend races. As long as we helped our descendants seal the monsters, we would naturally be set free."

Zu An nodded.

This is largely similar to what he said before. Earlier, he had to speak mostly the truth in order to fool me.

At the same time, he was a bit shocked that Imperial Gate Bei Qing actually had that ability, and could actually decide whether or not someone could be set free even thousands of years later.

Just how did he do it?

Even though he had learned the Baopu Sutra and was quite well learned in this field, he still couldn't imagine just what kind of method could produce a similar result. He could only ask, "Can I still use this Skycloud Sword to summon you?"

"That's right, but a special incantation is needed," Shi Bingxiu said, then repeated the incantation to him.

Zu An vigilantly tested it out. When he saw that he could indeed order the ghosts around through the incantation, he sighed in relief. He was a bit confused, however. He said, "Imperial Gate Bei Qing was able to keep all of you here to help the Fiend races, but he didn't pass on the incantation to the Fiend races directly, and passed it on to you instead?"

Shi Bingxiu's expression grew strange as he replied, "I didn't understand it either and just thought that guy was a fool. There was no way I would obediently listen to him, after all. At the time, he said that only if I sincerely spoke of this incantation and collaborated with a certain person from the future would I be truly set free. Now, I seem to understand a bit better."

Zu An was stunned.

It seems Imperial Gate Bei Qing wanted them to repent genuinely and sincerely, and only then would they actually help at the crucial time. Otherwise, if they once again chose betrayal at the crucial battle between the fiends and monsters, everything would be over.

Even though he could understand the reasoning, Zu An still felt that Imperial Gate Bei Qing was just too brave. Was he not scared that these fellows would never change their ways? If it weren't for his quick wits, and if another Fiend descendant had come in his stead, they would've already died several times over. There was no way Shi Bingxiu would have obediently offered up the true incantation.

After thinking about it for a long time, he couldn't figure out just where Imperial Gate Bei Qing had gotten such confidence from. However, he still had more

important matters to worry about, so he couldn't be bothered to worry about all of those things. Thus, he took the Skycloud Sword with him and quickly headed in another direction.

The soldiers' souls stood on the snowy tombs and watched Zu An gradually disappear. They were clearly trapped here unless the Skycloud Sword was used to summon them.

Among them, there was a deputy general who couldn't help but move over to Shi Bingxiu's side, asking, "General, do you think he'll only use the divine weapon for the seal and won't free us?"

Shi Bingxiu shook his head and replied, "He won't. He still needs us."

Immediately after, the countless figures gradually vanished into the air. Wind and snow covered the snowy tombs again.

...

Zu An went northwest, toward another location the people of Mengte City had deduced. There was another divine weapon hidden there, and that fact was confirmed by Shi Bingxiu, who had said that the Ninefoot Mirror would be there. Zu An knew that if he delayed for even a bit longer, those monsters could break through, so he flew at full speed without spending even a moment to rest.

When he arrived at the region designated on the map and searched for a while, he decided to stop near a few black rocks that were quite conspicuous in the end. He walked up to those rocks and saw that they weren't naturally formed, but rather had traces of being handmade. He could even make out some decorative carvings, and he could barely recognize some characters written on them.

He was about to remove the snow that covered them to look at them more closely when the ground beneath him gave out. The entire world seemed to suddenly cave in, and he immediately fell down. Even so, with his cultivation, he quickly stabilized himself in the air. At first, he thought that perhaps there was some trap below, but once he took a look, he saw that the accumulated snow had begun to slide off, gradually revealing the scene underneath.

These weren't rocks, but rather towering pillars! They had been buried under the snow and their entire form couldn't be seen, so that was why he had

mistaken them for stones. However, since there was a huge amount of space below, the years-old piles of snow weren't too stable. His steps on the surface had caused the snow to completely collapse and reveal the pillars' original appearance.

When he saw the ruined walls up ahead and the pillars that soared into the air, Zu An was a bit confused. He hadn't expected this place to actually have such structures, because they were clearly made in the style of the Fiend races' buildings. They looked like a ruined temple.

The ancient Fiend races had actually built a temple here? Could it have been built specially to store the Ninefoot Mirror?

Zu An's divine sense scanned the area. When he was sure that there were no monsters waiting in ambush, he then moved further inside.

As he went further in, Zu An was a bit confused as he looked at the surrounding buildings. These walls were a bit too strange, right? Normally, after the endless passage of time, many buildings would naturally be eroded and destroyed, but there would still be some traces left. There was no way there could be no traces left at all. Furthermore, many other walls were clearly well-preserved. Being buried under snow had ended up preserving them. That made the missing buildings' complete disappearance seem even stranger.

Zu An was quite puzzled. He didn't delay and quickly walked inside. In theory, the Ninefoot Mirror would be stored at the very center of the temple. The layout the Fiend races designed their temples with appeared in his mind; he headed toward several palaces where the mirror could be.

And yet, not long after, he ran into a dead end. There was no great hall or other such areas, only a bare wall. He reached out his hand and investigated the wall. It was solid, without any hidden secret rooms.

He wasn't willing to just give up and continued to search the broken structure, searching every nook and cranny of it, but he ended up with nothing. The areas that could be considered actual rooms could be counted on his fingers. There was no way that any Ninefoot Mirror could possibly be hidden here.

Could it be that a monster got here first?

Zu An shook his head. These three divine weapons were the Fiend race's greatest secrets. Not even the higher level figures in Mengte City knew of

such intelligence, so there was even less of a chance of the Second Prince knowing.

It seemed the Ninefoot Mirror definitely had to be hidden somewhere here, but he just hadn't found it yet. He decided to just sit down by an empty area and try to figure out a solution.

Could it be that the buildings here were all a kind of formation? He had investigated them earlier. The stone material that these structures used was quite special, something that he had never seen before. When he hit the surface, it had even absorbed some of the force and remained unharmed. No wonder this place had remained standing for so many years.

Of course, with Zu An's current cultivation, if he really wanted to destroy it, he had ways. Even so, he was worried that he could destroy the layout and end up ruining his chances of finding the Ninefoot Mirror forever.

Countless formation combinations appeared in his mind, but not a single one of them matched up with the one in front of him right now.

...

Time passed. Soon, the sky gradually turned white, clearly signaling the end of the night.

Zu An, who had been sitting in meditation, opened his eyes. He stared at everything around him in disbelief. After all, almost every inch of the surroundings structures were already engraved inside of his memory so he could find a way through this place's puzzle. And yet now, these structures had changed greatly in appearance!

No, apart from some minor things, it was already entirely different from what he had seen before. Many buildings from the previous night had vanished, and many other places now contained more structures!

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2056: Flower, Yet Not a Flower; Fog, Yet Not Fog. Where Is the Inverse Universe?

Zu An noticed that a well had appeared out of thin air in a vacant area. He had examined that area many times the day before, so he was certain that it wasn't there previously. He walked up to the side of the well and saw something even stranger: The water inside wasn't frozen!

After all, in this world of ice and snow, even the air that a normal person exhaled would become a frigid mist. A layer of icy-cold frost would appear on one's face in just a few seconds. A bit longer, and an ordinary person would already freeze to death. Not even those with lower cultivation ranks would be able to hold on for very long. How could this well still have water that hadn't frozen? Could it be that the Ninefoot Mirror was hidden in this well, and that the well was kept under protection by its divine force, thus preventing the water from freezing?

Zu An reached his hand into the water to feel it, and ascertained that there was nothing strange. Then, he jumped straight in. With his Blue Mallard ability, there was no problem moving through water at all.

At first, he thought that there could be some giant space underneath, and he was even ready to explore for a long time. However, after sinking a dozen or so meters, he didn't actually discover any hidden rooms or spaces. There were only a few characters carved at the very bottom.

Even though he was in the dark, that wasn't any trouble for Zu An. He quickly read through the contents. "Flower, yet not a flower; fog, yet not fog. Where is the inverse universe?"

Zu An was stunned. What was the meaning of this sentence?

Even after thinking to himself for a long time, he couldn't figure anything out. He could only leave the well for the time being. He stood by the side of the well and stared at the rippling surface of the water. He continued to think about the meaning of those words. Several guesses appeared in his mind, but he dismissed them one after another. Right now, he had too little information and couldn't make any conclusions.

Zu An didn't keep dwelling on it either and decided to take a look elsewhere. He discovered that there were far more structures around him in the morning than at night. Right now, it resembled the outlines of a temple more.

He felt a bit of relief. He had been wondering why there were so many structures missing yesterday, and there were no traces of erosion either. So they were all over here! Could it be that different parts would appear as the day changed?

This was a place where the ancient Fiend races kept their treasure. Furthermore, judging from the design of the temple's buildings, this was likely the work of Imperial Gate Bei Qing again. Just how had they managed to do all of this?

Zu An couldn't help but become curious about the mysterious Imperial Gate Bei Qing. He hadn't expected the Fiend races to actually have someone so incredible in their past. Bei Qing's achievements in the field of formations weren't necessarily inferior to Immortal Ruler Baopu's.

While he was feeling incredibly moved, he walked around the newly appeared structures. In the end, he stopped in front of a place that looked like the main hall. There, he found a stone stage with a slanted disc on top. At the center of the disc was a stone needle. All kinds of scales and diagrams were marked all around the disc.

Zu An noticed that the stone needle was pointed at a certain marking on the disc. He couldn't help but feel a bit startled.

This thing is really similar to an ancient sundial!

But apart from those markings that represented time, what were the other strange diagrams?

He reached out his hand and gently touched the disc. Suddenly, cracking noises filled the air. He was shocked to discover that the disc could actually be turned!

As the disc moved, the stone needle also moved to different markings. Zu An suddenly looked up, because he discovered that the sun above him was also moving along with everything else. He couldn't help but feel horrified. This thing could actually control the sun? Then just what kind of being was Imperial Gate Bei Qing?

Even so, Zu An quickly calmed down. He reached into the skies with his divine sense, and his expression became a bit strange. He muttered, "It's not a real sun after all."

As he continued to turn the disc, he discovered that night quickly arrived. The surrounding structures became faintly visible, and even the disc in his hands seemed as if it was about to disappear. Fortunately, he was already prepared for that. He quickly spun it back and returned to daytime. Then, the structures finally stabilized.

Just then, he noticed that the special diagrams could be moved as well! He tried to move them, and heard a rumbling noise. Some of the buildings began to move. He immediately realized something when he saw that. He could now roughly guess the arrangement Imperial Gate Bei Qing had created here.

No wonder he had felt that the layout of these buildings was a bit messy. It turned out they needed to be rearranged! Furthermore, this sundial in front of him seemed to be the formation disc. Not only could it control time, it could even manipulate the positions of the buildings.

In order to increase the difficulty, the buildings were even divided into day and night. That way, no matter how one tried to piece them together, it was impossible to succeed. Only when they were merged together would the structures be completely pieced together.

Even so, none of that was a problem for Zu An. His memory was practically photographic. The structures from the previous night were still firmly in his memory. He tried to move the diagram on the disc and quickly figured out the rules. He began to quickly move the structures based on his memories. Soon after, the walls, pillars, and other structures moved together, and resembled a complete temple more and more.

However, Zu An furrowed his brows. While moving the diagrams, he hesitated several times, and eventually, he let go completely and thought to himself. Even though he had already pieced together most of it according to his memory, nearly half of the structures just didn't join together. He recalled the structures from last night to make sure that he hadn't made a mistake. He found that those structures couldn't be moved either, nor could they be controlled by the disc, so there was no issue on this side.

He stared at the structures in front of him. He had already tried several strategies before, but there had always been some buildings he couldn't piece together, and there were still quite a few buildings were missing. He was now already certain that these buildings alone couldn't complete the temple.

According to the earlier clues, his original plan to manipulate the disc to move the structures wasn't wrong. It seemed he was still missing some important clue, though.

He suddenly thought of the well from earlier and the sentence at the bottom: Flower, yet not a flower; fog, yet not fog. Where is the inverse universe?

Is the first half referring to the philosophical concept of 'water moon, mirror flower'[1]? And the latter half, manipulating day and night through the sundial?

He felt as if he had almost grasped something important, but then it slipped away.

Unknowingly, he arrived at the side of the well. He wanted to go inside and take another look. His gaze stopped on the water's surface. Apart from his own reflection, there were also the other structures. A smile appeared on his face. He finally understood where the missing structures were.

He quickly flew back to the disc and reorganized the buildings. This time, he scrambled the entire place before quickly arranging it again. If there were other people watching, they would definitely find that extremely strange, because the structures now looked extremely messy and chaotic. They didn't even look as good as his earlier plan.

However, the grin on his face grew larger and larger. Eventually, with a final twist, he rubbed his hands together and said, "It's finished!"

He had just comprehended the meaning of that sentence. It was actually quite simple; the meaning was that he couldn't see those buildings from a normal viewpoint, but rather had to flip them at a ninety degree angle. The structures on the ground and the water surface thus linked up together to form a perfect temple.

The only troublesome thing was that he was lacking the buildings from nighttime. He frowned. Once night fell, the daytime buildings would disappear. So how was he supposed to make both buildings appear at the same time?

Suddenly, he thought of how the sealed land could only be entered when the sun and moon exchanged. He slowly moved the sundial's outer disc to a certain time.

The sun in the sky was about to disappear behind the mountain, but it didn't completely fall. At the same time, the sun's inverted image appeared in the well. Because of the cool well water, it looked like a moon, which perfectly fit the condition of replicating the sun and moon's exchange.

The nighttime structures began to appear, then ultimately combined with the other structures and reflections to form a complete temple.

A burst of blinding light suddenly shot out from the well, and immediately after, the entire thing quickly shrank. In the end, the water surface condensed into a mirror.

The Ninefoot Mirror thus appeared!

1. Mirror Flower, Water Moon is a Chinese proverb/phrase referring to something that can be seen but not touched, like a flower reflected in a mirror or the moon reflected on the water's surface; something that is beautiful but unattainable dreams, a mirage. ?

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2057: Imperial Gate Bei Qing Is a Woman?

The Ninefoot Mirror was like the ancient well in miniature. The patterns around it were identical to the ones that had been on the well.

Zu An smiled. From the very start, he had felt that the well was a bit special; it was just that he hadn't expected it to be none other than the Ninefoot Mirror. Everything around it had become a world unto itself, where even the sun, moon, and buildings could be moved. It turned out all of that was possible through the miraculous effects of the item.

He walked over, and was about to take the Ninefoot Mirror when he suddenly stopped. He looked at it with a serious expression.

The Ninefoot Mirror suddenly emanated a streak of white mist. An illusory shadow gradually appeared.

Zu An secretly prepared for battle. Incredible treasures often had things protecting them. Could it be that this was some form of protection Immortal

Gate Bei Qing had left behind? But if he had prepared a protector in addition to the puzzle that had so much invested into it, wasn't this Immortal Gate Bei Qing a bit too much of a busybody?

The white figure gradually appeared. It didn't look like a monster, but rather like a slender and elegant woman; she was an extremely beautiful woman, at that. She was dressed in a voluminous black and white gown, and on her head was a tall hat. She looked a bit like the onmyoji Zu An had seen on the internet. She was clearly extremely beautiful, but Zu An's first reaction wasn't to admire her beauty, but rather to admire her aura of transcendence. She seemed like an incredible being from beyond this world, so pure that it was impossible to think of any evil thoughts about her.

Zu An was actually a bit confused. He had clearly never seen this woman before, so why did she feel a bit familiar? After all, with his current cultivation, his memory was already incredibly strong. He wouldn't even forget a stranger he passed by on the street, let alone a woman with such an incredible presence.

The woman looked back at him. It felt as if countless emotions passed through her eyes in an instant, but in the end, she only released a soft sigh. She said, "Even though I really want to see you, that might not be a good thing. It seems as if things really are headed in the worst direction."

Zu An was stunned. He exclaimed, "You recognize me?"

Judging from her tone, it was as if the two of them were really close friends, and perhaps even more than that.

What the heck? Do I have memory loss or something? If not, why can't I think of anything?

The woman nodded, but then shook her head.

Zu An chuckled, remarking, "Don't you think your way of flirting is a bit too overused?" Even though he was full of doubts, he quickly calmed down and didn't show any of it.

The woman smiled and said, "Sure enough, some things never change."

When he heard her familiar voice, Zu An felt even more confused. He asked, "Are you the protector Immortal Gate Bei Qing left behind to guard the

Ninefoot Mirror? Speak up already if there's some kind of trial, or if we have to fight. I'm in a hurry."

This woman was indeed extremely pretty, but it had been a long time since he couldn't move on when he saw a beautiful woman. Furthermore, he had already spent more time than he would have liked here, and he was worried that the seal could completely break. Everything would be too late then.

The beautiful woman shook her head slightly and said, "I am not the protector of the Ninefoot Mirror; I am Imperial Gate Bei Qing."

When he heard her words, Zu An's eyes almost popped out. He had many guesses, but he never could have predicted this.

Wasn't Immortal Gate Bei Qing a man? Even children know about his story.

How did he become a woman, and such a beautiful woman at that?

The woman smiled when she saw his look of puzzlement, saying, "Of course, this is not me, but rather just a fragment of my will that I left in the Ninefoot Mirror to await the one who shares this destiny. I simply did not expect that person to be you. As expected, you were the only one who could solve my puzzle."

Zu An was speechless. He replied, "Excuse me, beautiful miss, can you please not talk in riddles and just tell me what's going on directly?"

The more the woman spoke, the more confused Zu An grew, especially when he heard her mention that things were headed in the worst direction, which gave him an ominous feeling.

The beautiful woman didn't respond to his question, and instead looked at him quietly. Her eyes were filled with endless reluctance, and her entire figure gradually grew faint. It was clear that the fragment of her will couldn't stay in this world for that long.

Zu An panicked and continued, "You're already about to disappear, and yet you can't even tell me a bit of useful information? Do you really like being mysterious that much? Or is there a way for me to preserve this fragment of will?"

The beautiful woman smiled faintly and replied, "The fact that I could even remain here for this long is already a miracle in itself. There is no other method that can prolong my life further. However, there is no need for you to worry, because we will meet again."

Zu An was a bit speechless. He said, "Miss, you are already an ancient senior who died who knows how many years ago, so how can I possibly meet you? Hm? Could it be that you left another will fragment somewhere else?"

The beautiful woman didn't reply, and instead looked at him with a complicated expression. She said, "You only need to firmly remember one thing. Cause is not necessarily the beginning, and effect is not necessarily the end."

Afterward, she dissolved into specks of starlight.

Zu An was speechless.

*What the f*ck? What in the world is going on?*

"Big sis empress, why is this woman just like you, someone who loves to talk in riddles?" Zu An remarked mockingly.

"Hmph, what big sis? Call me master," Mi Li said as she appeared nearby, seeming really dissatisfied with what he called her. Amid this world of ice and snow, her red garb seemed even more striking.

"Okay, big sis empress," Zu An said, before belatedly exclaiming in shock and surprise, "You woke up!"

At first, he had just been making a casual remark, and hadn't expected Mi Li to actually wake up.

"I might not wake up if you say good things about me, but I definitely will when you're saying bad things about me." Mi Li harrumphed.

Zu An chuckled, saying, "But I didn't say anything bad. This Imperial Gate Bei Qing came out and spoke a bunch of obscure crap, and just refused to tell it to me straight. I really wonder where she picked up that bad habit from."

"Why are you dragging me into this too?" Mi Li retorted in annoyance, then added, "Do you think Imperial Gate Bei Qing is an idiot?"

Zu An shook his head and said, "Of course not."

Ever since ancient times, there had been countless stories surrounding Imperial Gate Bei Qing circulating among the Fiend races, and her name had almost become synonymous with the word 'wisdom'. How could someone like that possibly be an idiot?

"Then isn't that enough? If she isn't an idiot, and she can't tell it to you straight, she definitely has a reason, and has no choice but to talk that way," Mi Li said with an annoyed look.

"What reason?" Zu An asked.

Mi Li reflexively answered, "For example, she could be worried that knowing more would only bring you danger, or that it would provoke a certain being..." She shut her mouth midway through her sentence and shot him a look, asking, "Are you messing with me again?"

"I really was confused..." Zu An said, chuckling in embarrassment.

"There's no need to think too much about it. Just remember what she told you. You'll naturally understand once the time comes," Mi Li said. She stretched lazily and added, "Sigh, this was a rare chance to emerge. I'll have to go back to sleep again."

Zu An was a bit reluctant, asking, "Just who are you hiding from? Can't you just stay with me for a bit?"

"The world barrier has already been activated, so I can only do my best to remain asleep. Otherwise, I'll end up drawing the attention of a certain being you have absolutely no chance against," Mi Li said with a sigh. If not for the fact that she knew this was a space created by the Ninefoot Mirror, she wouldn't have dared to come out like this.

When she saw the reluctance on his face, a hint of warmth appeared on Mi Li's face. She said, "If you want me to spend more time outside, then you should hurry and become stronger."

"How strong do I have to be?"

"You'll know when the time comes."

Zu An was speechless.

In the end, Mi Li returned to the Tai'e Sword. Zu An put away the Ninefoot Mirror and continued to the third location without taking any time to rest.

He wondered just what kind of nonsense he'd have to deal with once he arrived at the Soul Capturing Jade's location. When he recalled what Imperial Gate Bei Qing had looked like, he actually felt a bit annoyed. He really wanted to prop her up on his knees and give her a vicious spanking. She had spoken so much, and yet she hadn't even told him how to obtain the Soul Capturing Jade.

Does she really have that much confidence that I'll be able to solve her incredibly hard prompts?

...

Soon after, he arrived at the final region marked on the map. After searching around for a bit, in the end, he focused his attention on an ice hole he couldn't see the bottom of. There was a dim blue light coming from inside, and there was a special kind of chill coming out from it that made even him, with his current cultivation, shiver. The Wind Fire Wheels' flames became really weak, as if they could go out at any time.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2058: Snow Lady

"This kind of feeling..." Zu An muttered with a frown. He just felt a mysterious sense of familiarity.

He put away the Wind Fire Wheels and entered the ice hole. Energy quickly moved around him to dispel the chill. As he ventured deeper inside, he saw that it was even larger than he imagined. Compared to the tattered temple where the Ninefoot Mirror was, this place had likely been preserved even better because it was hidden deep inside the ice hole.

The place looked like a sacred temple that both humans and fiends would use to hold offerings to the heavens. Next to a perfectly straight main path towered two rows of giant humanoid ice sculptures. Every single sculpture was strange

in appearance, and they bore some complicated rune engravings. They all gave off a mysterious sense of divinity. Zu An figured they were probably deity-like beings that the Fiend races had offered sacrifices to in the past. In the past, perhaps he would have treated these things as mere folklore, but now that he had experienced all kinds of strange and bizarre things, in that instant, he even wondered if these deities truly existed...

As he walked deeper inside, he discovered that there were some ancient murals on the walls. As he followed them, he saw that they seemed to record the heroic deeds of the Fiend races as they fought off the monsters from worlds beyond.

Suddenly, he focused on one part, noticing that there were some collapsed and broken mechanisms there. He could tell that there were traces of a formation having been there previously. He felt a sense of unease. There had probably been some shielding and protective formations here before, which was why no one had discovered it. The only reason he'd been able to find this place so easily was because of the map provided by the higher-ups of the Fiend races and his own powerful divine sense. Only now did he realize that it was the unnatural ki leaking out from this place that had drawn him to it.

Before he arrived, he'd been worried about whether there was some really hard problem he had to solve. Now, it seemed there was nothing for him to solve, because someone had already gotten ahead of him.

He didn't stall any longer and quickly flew inside. Soon after, he arrived in front of a narrow pathway and heard strange roars coming from inside.

Is there some kind of beast inside?

As he looked at the pitch-black path, Zu An frowned slightly. Even so, with his current cultivation, he naturally didn't fear any beast. He took out a talisman and tossed it over. Soon after, the talisman lit up everything in front of him like a flare. This path seemed to be hundreds of meters long, but it wasn't that spacious and could only barely allow a single person through. Some individuals with larger builds would just barely be able to crawl through it.

And yet, what drew his attention was that there were many deep, chaotic scars all over the surrounding walls, as if they had been cut open by an extremely sharp blade. Zu An reached out and touched the surface. He couldn't sense any sword or blade intent from them. He was worried that

someone would get to the divine artifact before him, so he didn't think about it any further and decided to go inside first.

After he walked a few dozen meters ahead, the low roar became louder and clearer. A faint yellow Tranquility Bell projection appeared around his body. At the same time, he put up several defensive formations.

Just then, the roar suddenly became extremely sharp. When he saw the blast of wind surging at him, he finally knew what it was.

Wind! An incredibly berserk and wild wind!

There were many wind element cultivators in this world. Apart from excelling in speed, they also had a similar ability, which was the Wind Edge. It was as hard to block as a powerful swordsman's sword ki. However, even all of the wind element experts added together couldn't compare to the gust of wind in front of Zu An.

The defensive formations around Zu An were shattered almost instantly. Immediately after, the Tranquility Bell only lasted for a few breaths of time before it was covered in cracks and shattered. Fortunately, Zu An reacted quickly and used the Heaven Devouring Sutra. His entire body became like a black hole, absorbing and converting the berserk winds, thus avoiding disaster.

...

After passing through the narrow path, Zu An saw that it was connected to a void. The one who created this place had probably used some ingenious method to guide chaotic tribulation winds into this place, so it was no wonder that they were so powerful. Forget about a grandmaster, even earth immortals would quickly have all of their flesh stripped right off of their bones.

That Imperial Gate Bei Qing woman really is a two-faced bitch! She actually set up such a dangerous trap here? Wasa she not scared of her descendants being shredded to dust here?

But after thinking about it, anyone who came here would definitely be here for the mission of sealing the monsters from an alien word. Those with lower cultivations wouldn't be able to do much even if they obtained a divine artifact, and leaving such artifacts in their hands would only result in a bigger risk of the enemy getting their hands on them...

Zu An felt a bit more relieved when he understood that. Still, he felt that Bei Qing was a bit too unreasonably calculating in her thinking. The terrifying cosmic storm had another benefit, however. At first, he had been worried that the Soul Capturing Jade would be seized by someone else first, but now, that possibility no longer seemed too likely. Even he had almost died here, so he refused to believe that there was anyone else who could pass through.

Soon, he arrived at the altar in the center. He saw a staircase that extended downward, and there were clearly still hidden mechanisms there. If they weren't triggered, there was no way they would appear on their own. He hurriedly rushed inside, but quickly stopped in his tracks, his smile freezing on his face. There was a hidden room beneath the altar, containing a stone box... but it was already open. The contents were missing.

Zu An's expression became extremely unpleasant. This was clearly the place that stored the Soul Capturing Jade, and sure enough, it had already been brought away by a mysterious person. If it was a person, that would still be fine, but if it was a monster, the consequences would be too horrible to imagine.

He was still unwilling to give up and searched several times around the vicinity. In the end, however, he could only admit that the Soul Capturing Jade was indeed no longer here. Just who was it that had the ability to get through Imperial Gate Bei Qing's various mechanisms, and even pass through the terrifying cosmic storm?

His eyes landed on the stone box, and his finger gently touched the surface. Even though he was surrounded by a world of ice and snow, there was a part of the surface that was even colder. He could still vaguely sense the leftover chill. He closed his eyes and fully relaxed himself. He opened up his sea of consciousness and began to silently sense everything in the room.

A while later, he finally sensed a faint trace of an aura. That aura was extremely familiar, to the point that there was no way he could ever forget it.

"The Snow Lady?" Zu An exclaimed, his eyes widening in shock. In the past, his cultivation had still been lacking and he was chased after by the mysterious Snow Lady. In order to flee for his life, he'd had no choice but to use Keyboard Come. At that time, his body had almost broken down completely, but fortunately, Yan Xuehen had used her own body to save him...

How could he forget such a deeply engraved memory? That Snow Lady's aura was just too unique, to the point that nothing else was even similar in this world. But why would the Snow Lady be here?

He had already sensed a familiar aura outside the cave. At the time, he'd thought that he was mistaken. After all, this was the Fiend races' sealed land. It was far, far away from the Great Snowy Mountain. How could the Snow Lady possibly appear in this place?

But now, he had no choice but to believe that this was indeed what had happened. Judging from the traces here, it seemed to have not been that long since the Snow Lady left.

When he thought of that, he didn't dare to wait any longer. He rushed straight for the exit of the cave. He was initially worried that he would lose the trail, but soon after he left the ice hole, he saw it. Even though there was only wind and snow around him, the Snow Lady's aura was especially distinct.

As he chased after that aura, Zu An became more and more confused. Normally, with the Snow Lady's cultivation, her aura wouldn't be leaking out so prominently. Was this a trap to draw him in, or was there something wrong with the Snow Lady's body?

He continued for more than ten kilometers before suddenly stopping. He looked at the beautiful figure he saw within a snowy valley. The Snow Lady was sitting on a rock, in a daze. It was impossible to tell what she was thinking about.

In the past, he had only felt that the Snow Lady was horrifying, but now, this was the first time Zu An had examined her appearance. Her entire body was made from ice and snow, and there seemed to be a layer of light muslin covering her body. Her face was clearly a bit hazy, but overall, she looked like a stunning, veiled beauty. There was a pure and transcendent feeling coming from her.

Zu An couldn't help but think of the incredibly beautiful snow women he had seen before online. In that instant, he became briefly absent-minded.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2059: Unexpected Reply

Chapter 2059: Unexpected Reply

“That really did bring back memories about the TikTok popularity voting days...” Zu An muttered. Even though it had already been a long time since he transmigrated into this world, many memories from his previous world were still deeply ingrained in his memory.

The snowstorm continued to rage, but none of it seemed to land on the Snow Lady, and seemed to merge with her instead. Zu An actually briefly glimpses her beautiful hair that was made of ice and snow, but a moment later, it was seemingly covered in a veil again. Normally, it would have made sense to assume that she simply had an entire body made of ice and snow. But now, Zu An’s cultivation was extremely high and his eyesight was far stronger than in the past. He saw that she actually seemed to be dressed in clothes made of ice, resembling a pretty wedding dress.

In the past, when Zu An read ‘Demigods and Semi-Devils’, he just hadn’t been able to figure out why that brat Duan Yu would become so obsessed with a jade statue after a single look. Now, he was starting to understand a bit more. There really were some statues that were more beautiful than a real person.

Suddenly, the Snow Lady seemed to have noticed his approach. With a wave of her hand, a blast of cold rushed at Zu An. However, he didn’t dodge it. He swept his hand outward, and a streak of sword ki split the incoming wind in half.

He was a bit surprised, because the attack seemed to be much weaker than what he had experienced in the past. It wasn’t an impression he had just because he had become stronger, but rather a logical deduction. The Snow Lady didn’t seem to be at her strongest right now.

The Snow Lady finally saw Zu An. She tilted her head slightly, exclaiming, “It’s you?”

Zu An was a bit surprised, replying, “You still remember me?” He was actually more surprised that she was actually capable of human speech. Apart from her tone being a bit cold, her voice was actually quite nice.

"I attacked you in the past, but you were able to get away. That event was quite hard to forget," the Snow Lady said as she stood up. Her body was clearly made of ice and snow, and yet not a single bit fell off.

Zu An looked at her, asking, "You're injured?" At his cultivation realm, it wasn't hard to deduce her current condition.

The Snow Lady frowned slightly and said, "If we're going to fight, then so be it. What's the use in wasting so much time?"

Zu An said seriously, "This time, I didn't come for revenge, but rather in search of the Soul Capturing Jade. If you return it to me, I'll leave immediately."

"Soul Capturing Jade?" the Snow Lady repeated as she took out a pendant-like object. She asked, "Are you talking about this?"

The pendant looked like a crescent moon. Even though Zu An had never seen the Soul Capturing Jade, he was immediately certain that this was it as soon as he saw it. Moreover, both the Ninefoot Mirror and Skycloud Sword were shaking slightly. It was clear that now that the three divine weapons were near each other, they had started to resonate with each other.

Zu An had a weird expression. The Snow Lady had actually placed the pendant by her chest, within her icy clothes.

"How rude!" As if sensing where he was looking, the Snow Lady got angry. She raised her hand, and countless icicles fired over like sharp swords.

You have successfully trolled the Snow Lady for +344 +344 +344...

A streak of faint golden light appeared around Zu An, blocking all of the icicles. When he saw that she was going to continue attacking, he quickly raised his hand to stop her. He said, "You're clearly not a match for me right now, and I don't want to take advantage of your difficulties either. As long as you give me that item, I'll leave immediately. We can fight again once you've fully recovered."

The Snow Lady looked at him in confusion and replied, "Attacking an enemy when they're weakened is the most fundamental principle of fighting, is it not? Why are you doing this instead?"

Zu An smiled and said, "Maybe it's because I'm human."

For some reason, when he saw her now, he just felt that there was a mysterious sense of intimacy coming from her... As soon as he had that thought, he chastised himself inwardly. To think that when he saw her in Great Snowy Mountain, he had treated her like a monster, but just because she was pretty, his attitude had changed completely!

"What a strange human," the Snow Lady said. At first she didn't quite believe him, but when she sensed that he didn't carry much hostility, she didn't continue attacking and said, "I can't give this to you."

"Why is that?" Zu An asked with a frown. He really needed the item to repair the seal. If she wasn't willing to give it to him, then no matter how pretty she was, he could only use force.

"I'm injured and need this item to treat my injuries," the Snow Lady said, not holding back the truth either. Either way, he had already seen through her current condition.

"You're injured? Who in this world could even injure you?" Zu An exclaimed in surprise. After all, the Snow Lady was already one of the most powerful beings in this world. In the past, not even the powerful Zhao Han or the late Fiend Emperor had been able to easily enter the Great Snowy Mountain precisely because they feared her existence. Now, both Zhao Han and the Fiend Emperor had died, so who could still injure her?

"I don't know either. I've never seen them on the Great Snowy Mountain before, but recently, some powerful beings suddenly appeared. They invaded my territory and paid no heed to my warnings. I couldn't chase them away either. After fighting a great battle, even though I forced them back, I was also wounded," the Snow Lady said candidly.

Zu An found the explanation rather amusing. This Snow Lady's way of thinking was a bit similar to an animal's territorial tendencies.

Snow Lady's cultivation was extremely high and she quickly sensed his expression. She exclaimed, "Are you laughing at me?"

"I'm not!" Zu An cried. His expression immediately stiffened as he denied it.

"You clearly laughed just now," the Snow Lady said.

"I..." Zu An was about to reply when he was suddenly stunned. Why did this sound like a conversation between lovers?

He quickly collected his thoughts and asked, "What exactly are those beings like? Can you describe them a bit?"

"Ugly, extremely disgusting," the Snow Lady said with an expression of disdain. Then, she looked at Zu An and remarked, "You're much better looking than them."

Zu An was speechless. For some reason, after hearing this praise, he couldn't bring himself to smile at all.

"It seems the monsters from another world have already invaded the Great Snowy Mountain," Zu An said, his mood a bit heavy. Hadn't the War Priest previously said that there was some world barrier, that most of those powerful beings couldn't cross over? Why were they all over the place?

That guy didn't give me wrong information on purpose, did he?

"Monster? That word seems to be quite fitting," the Snow Lady said with a nod. She clearly approved of that name.

Zu An thought for a bit before asking, "How strong were those guys? How do they compare to you? Were you injured because they surrounded you?"

"No," the Snow Lady said, shaking her head as she continued, "One of them fought against me one on one. That individual was really strong, and I was only able to win by relying on the familiar terrain around me. He had a few companions who were roughly on par with him in strength, and there was also one who was clearly much stronger than him who didn't fight."

Zu An immediately felt a bit downcast. He hadn't expected that none of them would be weaker than the Snow Lady, and one was even clearly stronger. The world barrier had probably already been poked full of holes by the monsters.

"Why didn't they surround and attack you together, and let you get away instead?" Zu An wondered, finding it a bit strange. If they were all that strong and there was even someone stronger, there should have been no reason to let her go so easily.

"I have some friends on the Great Snowy Mountain too," the Snow Lady said, raising her chin proudly. "Also, I could sense that they had misgivings toward something and couldn't attack at their full strength."

Zu An realized something and said, "They barely managed to break through this world's barrier, but they're still not tolerated by the will of the world. That's why they can't use their full power for now."

Actually, neither the War Priest nor the Manipulator of Death had been able to fight at full power.

"World barrier?" the Snow Lady repeated, then thought to herself for a bit. "It's most likely as you say."

Zu An asked, "Can you tell me about those monsters in more detail, and what their abilities are like?" Only by knowing oneself and one's enemy like that would he be better prepared in the future.

"Why do I need to share such important information with you?" the Snow Lady retorted coldly.

Zu An was speechless./ He was about to phrase his question differently when the Snow Lady's head tilted slightly and she stared at him for a while. She suddenly said, "Maybe it's because those monsters were too ugly, but the more I look at you, the more pleasing I find you. As long as you answer a question of mine, I'll tell you about those monsters."

Zu An suddenly felt a bit overwhelmed by favor. He had never expected her to respond like that. He replied, "Sen... What does the lady wish to ask me about?" He briefly thought about calling her 'senior', but he just felt that it was a bit unsuitable because of how cold and beautiful she was.

"Why don't I see that woman who was with you last time?" the Snow Lady asked, looking around.

"I came alone this time. She still has things to take care of herself," Zu An replied. He hadn't expected her to actually ask about that.

"Were the two of you previously lovers?" the Snow Lady asked.

Zu An was speechless. Wasn't this Snow Lady a bit too straightforward with her questions?

"That's already the second question," he complained.

"But I think it's the same question as the previous one," the Snow Lady said, clearly not feeling that there was anything wrong with it.

"We still are," Zu An said. He figured that either way, this Snow Lady didn't understand anything and there was no way she would have mingled with humans much. He decided to just answer her directly to prevent her from asking more and more questions. Either way, he and Yan Xuehen had already done everything lovers did. After all of that, no one would believe it if they said they weren't lovers.

"So that was the case," the Snow Lady said. She remained silent for a long time, seemingly thinking about something.

"Can you tell me about those monsters now? Also, how did you come all the way here from the Great Snowy Mountain? Did you come here because you knew that the Soul Capturing Jade was here?" Zu An immediately asked everything he wanted to know, just in case the Snow Lady would refuse to answer more than a single question.

The Snow Lady looked at him in confusion and asked, "What are you talking about? This is the Great Snowy Mountain."

Zu An was dumbfounded by the unexpected reply.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2060: A Deal

"You're saying this is the Great Snowy Mountain?" Zu An asked, looking at her in disbelief. *This Snow Lady is quite pretty, but there seems to be something not quite right with her brain...?*

The Snow Lady nodded. She appeared to find his reaction quite strange.

"This place is clearly the sealed land to the north of the Fiend races' territory. If I roughly calculate the distance, it should be a hundred and eight thousand miles away," Zu An couldn't help but say.

“Fiend races? Sealed land?” the Snow Lady repeated in confusion, as if she didn’t care much about worldly affairs. “I don’t know what you’re talking about, but I’m sure that this is the Great Snowy Mountain. I’ve always lived on the Great Snowy Mountain, so how can I not know about my own home?”

Zu An immediately became quiet and thought to himself.

Judging from how she's behaving, it doesn't seem as if she's lying, so what exactly is the problem?

Either one of us is wrong, or else... neither of us is! This place is the Fiend races' sealed land, but also the restricted Great Snowy Mountain.

Now that he thought about it, the Fiend races’ sealed land and the Great Snowy Mountain were really similar in many aspects. Both were desolate and uninhabited, and both were worlds of ice and snow.

He recalled that when he was heading through the north to provide assistance to the Fiend races, he had clearly sensed that the Great Snowy Mountain was colder than he remembered in the past. Now that he thought about it, it was probably because of the monsters invading, causing the environment to change. As for himself, he had clearly been in the sealed land, and yet he'd now suddenly arrived on the Great Snowy Mountain. It could be that there was some overlap between the two places, or maybe even that they were the same place.

No wonder the Great Snowy Mountain had been known as a forbidden place since ancient times. Even those as powerful as Zhao Han and the late Fiend Emperor hadn’t dared to venture too deeply inside. So it turned out to have this much of a connection with the ancient sealed land!

Zu An quickly snapped back out of his daze and said, “Right, tell me more about those monsters.”

This time, the Snow Lady didn’t refuse. She explained, “The one who fought against me was a several-hundred-meter long bone dragon. It had two ugly wings, and ice didn’t seem too effective against it. Fighting against it was really disadvantageous for me.”

“Bone dragon?” Zu An repeated, startled. He wondered if it was some kind of undead spirit, because then he would have a natural advantage against it.

The Snow Lady nodded slightly and continued, "There were a few others. One seemed to have been entirely pieced together from rocks and had a really strange appearance, another was half-human and half-scorpion, and the last one that was the most mysterious was covered in light, which prevented me from seeing exactly what it looked like too clearly."

"Not even you were able to see their appearance too clearly?" Zu An exclaimed in surprise.

After all, with the Snow Lady's cultivation, she should have been able to see through all kinds of illusions. Things like halos of light could conceal someone from ordinary people, but at her cultivation rank, that shouldn't have been too big of a deal at all. If she couldn't see the other side's real appearance, there was only one possibility, which was that their cultivation was much higher than the Snow Lady's.

Even though Zu An's cultivation had made huge breakthroughs, the Snow Lady's power had left him with too deep of an impression back then. Even though he wasn't scared of a fight if they really fought, he wouldn't dare to claim that his strength was far greater than hers. Didn't that mean the mysterious glowing individual was much stronger than himself?

It seems there really is something wrong with the seal. Even someone this powerful was able to cross over.

As such, he quickly said, "I need that Soul Capturing Jade to repair the seal, or else more and more powerful creatures will cross over. Miss, could you give me the Soul Capturing Jade?"

"But I need it for treatment," the Snow Lady said indifferently, directly rejecting the request.

"I'm quite good at treating people. I'll help you recover from your injuries, so give me the Soul Capturing Jade," Zu An said.

"But I'm not a human," the Snow Lady said, looking at him with a calm expression.

Zu An was speechless.

You're making so much sense...

He indeed didn't know what the Snow Lady's body was made of, so treatment wouldn't be so simple. Still, after thinking about it, he said, "It's all about different means to achieve the same end. I can give it a try."

The Snow Lady shook her head and said, "I'm not used to letting people touch me."

"It's fine, I can feel your pulse through threads," Zu An said. He took out two thin strands of silk and sent them toward the Snow Lady's wrist. He could turn his ki into threads too, but he was worried that she would still consider that to be a part of his body, so he didn't do that.

The Snow Lady looked at the two thin threads curiously. When they touched her wrist, she reflexively pulled back. However, Zu An said impatiently, "They have to be on your wrist for me to sense your current condition."

The Snow Lady was a bit suspicious. She asked, "You won't use this chance to ambush me, right?"

Zu An was speechless. He said, "Your injuries aren't light. If I really wanted to do anything to you, I wouldn't need an ambush at all."

The Snow Lady was a bit unhappy as she said, "I admit that your cultivation isn't bad, but even though I'm injured, it wouldn't be that easy for you to defeat me."

"Yes, yes, yes, you're right. That's why I'm talking with you so nicely," Zu An said. He really wasn't lying, though. Even though he could win against the Snow Lady, doing so would be going against his nature, and the monsters were her enemies too. The enemy of his enemy could well become a friend.

The Snow Lady was finally satisfied with that answer. She reached out her hand with a bit of hesitation.

Now, Zu An couldn't help but sigh with amazement. 'Spotlessly white wrists' could perhaps be used as praise when used to describe other women, but for the Snow Lady, that was but a natural fact. He had never seen a woman's hand that was so white before...

He quickly regained his focus. The two strings gently wrapped around the Snow Lady's wrist, and Zu An closed his eyes to sense her condition. Soon after, he opened his eyes in shock. He had thought that her body would be

entirely different from a human's, but now that he examined her, it was actually extremely similar!

But if she was human, how was she also completely made from ice? How could she still have the energy of life?

"What is it? You can't treat me?" the Snow Lady asked when she saw that.

"It's not that there's no way, but that method is... Forget it, I don't have a way," Zu An said, not going into the details.

Her injuries were indeed very serious, and they were wounds left behind by someone extremely strong. Primordial ki alone wouldn't be enough, so he could only use that method... Even so, he was too embarrassed to mention that method to even his lovers, because it would feel as if he was taking advantage of them. How could he do that to a stranger he had only met a few times?

When she heard him speak like that, the Snow Lady became even more curious. She asked, "Just what kind of method is it?"

"It's that my medical skill is so humble that I can't heal you," Zu An said, covered in cold sweat. If he really talked about it, perhaps she would just kill him on the spot. He was even starting to regret being so indecisive earlier.

"Humans really aren't honest after all." The Snow Lady harrumphed. Her expression became even colder.

"How long do you plan on using that Soul Capturing Jade?" Zu An asked to test the waters.

The Snow Lady looked away and clearly didn't want to pay him any attention.

Zu An could only say, "This is, after all, quite an important matter. You don't want those powerful creatures to appear day after day and disturb you on the Great Snowy Mountain either, right?"

The Snow Lady frowned. When she pictured that scenario, she seemed to be a bit troubled. In the end, she said, "If I use it for treatment, the Soul Capturing Jade will be consumed."

Zu An was stunned.

Then what the hell am I still messing around for?

He even started to emanate killing intent now. Even though that didn't match his style of doing things, when it was related to the safety of an entire world, he couldn't be bothered with the consequences anymore.

"What, are you going to kill to steal the treasure?" The Snow Lady said with a sneer, "Humans are hypocritical and deceitful after all."

Zu An replied, "You didn't need to tell me the truth, so why did you tell me that?"

"To see if you would use the chance to attack," The Snow Lady said coldly. "But now, even though you already have killing intent, you're still a bit hesitant, so you're still not that bad of a person."

Zu An was speechless.

Is this woman really the aloof type who doesn't care about worldly affairs?

The Snow Lady said, "I can give you the Soul Capturing Jade, but you have to help me with something."

"What is it?" Zu An asked, surprised.

"Help me drive away the monsters in my territory," the Snow Lady said seriously. She was clearly unhappy with those creatures disturbing her nest.

"No problem," Zu An said, sighing in relief. Either way, the monsters were his enemies too, so he would be taking care of two birds with one stone.

"Then you should go now," the Snow Lady said as she got up. She clearly didn't want to waste any time.

"Your injuries..." Zu An said hesitantly.

The Snow Lady walked ahead and said coldly, "It's fine."

Zu An quickly said, "I'm worried that your life might be in danger, so it might be better if I go on my own."

When she sensed the concern in his voice, the Snow Lady stopped and said, "You aren't a match for all of them by yourself." After pausing for a moment,

she continued, “Don’t worry, as long as the Great Snowy Mountain remains, I won’t die.”

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2061: Tussling From All Sides

Chapter 2061: Tussling From All Sides

Zu An was stunned. Judging from what she was saying, could it be that the Snow Lady was the incarnation of Great Snowy Mountain herself? He asked, “If you can’t die, why do you still need the Soul Capturing Jade for your recovery?”

The Snow Lady gave him a strange look and replied, “Not dying doesn’t mean I can’t be injured. You look pretty smart, so why are you asking me such a stupid question?” There was a bit of purity in her expression, as if she didn’t really know the affairs of the world too well. However, the more it was like that, the more it hurt.

Being called stupid by someone naturally ignorant definitely didn’t make Zu An feel good. He could only ask, “Just how did you find out that the Soul Capturing Jade could treat your injuries?”

After all, the Soul Capturing Jade was one of the three divine artifacts needed to strengthen the seal. That was the Fiend races’ greatest secret, and not even the higher-ups of the Fiend races knew about it. He himself had only managed to piece together the information by chance, so how did the Snow Lady know that this thing could treat her injuries?

The Snow Lady casually replied, “In the past, a human told me that if I was injured in the future, I could find the Soul Capturing Jade to heal my injuries.”

“Just what kind of remarkable person was it? How long ago did this happen?” Zu An exclaimed in surprise. The word she had used was 'human', meaning it wasn't a fiend. How could a human actually know so many secrets?

The Snow Lady reflexively opened her mouth to reply, but her expression became a bit lost. In the end, she said, “I forgot.”

Zu An was stunned. That was a reply he wasn't expecting at all. How could someone as powerful as the Snow Lady possibly forget that kind of thing?

The Snow Lady seemed to have realized that her behavior was a bit unusual too. She explained, "I don't know what's happening either, but there are many events of the past that I can't remember anymore. Even so, these should all be things from a long, long time ago."

Zu An wanted to ask some more, but he discovered that she was already in deep thought and muttering to herself, "That's strange... Why would I trust the words of a human that much?"

The Snow Lady continued to walk forward in a daze, as if she really couldn't figure the situation out.

Zu An became more and more curious, wondering just who could have been so incredible. The two of them walked through the snowstorm just like that, one behind the other, creating an extremely tranquil and harmonious scene.

...

Meanwhile, in the human side's Imperial Palace, Liu Ning stood in front of her mirror while dressed in splendid clothes. When she saw the beautiful figure in the reflection, she sighed deeply.

Off to the side, Eunuch Lu was absolutely breathtaken. Immediately after, he asked with an apologetic smile, "What seems to be bothering your highness?"

"Little Lu, do you think I'm beautiful?" Liu Ning asked, running her fingers across the exaggerated curve between her waist and bottom.

Eunuch Lu swallowed with difficulty before answering, "Your highness is as beautiful as a heavenly immortal, the number one beauty under the heavens."

"Tsk, it clearly sounds so fake." Liu Ning harrumphed. "I still know myself. Among my peers, I can't compare to Yu Yanluo, and among the younger generation, the Chu clan's first miss, the Bi clan's hussy... None of them are worse than me, and they have their age to their advantage."

"What is your highness saying? In this servant's eyes, your respected self is the most beautiful. None of the others added together can compare to even a single fingernail on your respected self's body," Eunuch Lu said eagerly.

"Who cares if that's what you think? What's most important is what Ah Zu thinks," Liu Ning said. She gently raised her dress and turned in front of the mirror, continuing, "Such a beautiful body, and yet it can only remain untouched at home."

"The regent will return to spend time with your highness once he finishes handling affairs on the Fiend side," Eunuch Lu said. He wasn't too upset; he knew that he had a fundamental deficiency in that department and couldn't console his goddess. Besides, he had already found an avenue for even greater gratification - the regent, who was powerful regardless of which aspect one was talking about. That was the man most suitable for the woman he loved the most in this life.

"I really wonder when he'll be able to come back. He'll no doubt have so many women at his side once he comes back too," Liu Ning said, seemingly realizing something; she couldn't help but feel a bit upset.

Eunuch Lu's expression darkened and he offered, "Your highness, what if this servant got rid of those vixens for you?"

Liu Ning was startled and exclaimed, "Are you going mad? I was just randomly speaking my mind. If something happened to those women, Ah Zu would definitely know that I did it. Wouldn't he hate me forever then?"

Eunuch Lu quickly said, "This servant will make sure to do it secretly, and even if it ends up being exposed, this servant will apologize for the offense myself, and will definitely not implicate your highness."

"Pah, who doesn't know you're one of my people? How could I not be involved?" Liu Ning glared at him and cursed in annoyance.

Even though he was being cursed at, Eunuch Lu still felt a sweet sensation inside. Those words continued to echo in his mind.

You're one of my people, you're one of my people...

Heh, her highness did treat me as one of her people after all.

"Don't think about doing those random foolish things. Forget about implicating me; even if it didn't, you wouldn't be able to kill those vixens. For example, that Chu clan one has Sect Master Yan behind her. Could you win against her?" Liu Ning continued.

"Your highness' criticism is correct," Eunuch Lu said, bowing and nodding. His mood was clearly really good.

Liu Ning released a long sigh. "Sigh... I was perfectly fine as an empress, but I suddenly became an empress dowager. It makes me feel as if I suddenly became a few decades older for no reason."

"Of course not! Your highness is still in your prime. Last time the southern border tribe's official came to visit your respected self, he even thought you were the crown princess," Eunuch Lu immediately said.

"That's just a subject's craftiness, and he clearly said that to make me happy. You even believe something like that?" Liu Ning said. Despite that, the happiness in her expression was still clear. Her mood was clearly lifted.

Eunuch Lu chuckled. Her highness had frequently been at odds with the Eastern Palace. The fact that she was happy to be mistaken for the crown princess could be a first.

"Little Lu, what major events have happened recently in the capital?" Liu Ning asked, her mood clearly having become much better. She turned her attention to the court's affairs.

"Your highness, the most significant event recently has been none other than King Wu entering the palace. King Wu is quite handsome, and Madam Wu is also exceptionally beautiful, so they immediately received a lot of popularity when they revealed themselves at the capital. Madam Wu in particular is someone who is difficult to forget after just a single look. There are even rumors that if she had been at the capital, perhaps the crown princess would not have been able to win her position among the younger generation so convincingly," Eunuch Lu said with a bow.

"Hmph, that wench Linglong isn't pretty enough to completely dominate the others anyway. Madam Dai and Madam Jin aren't any worse than her. Isn't it because she relied on her special identity as the crown princess to add to her charm?" Liu Ning remarked disdainfully.

"Your highness is absolutely correct," Eunuch Lu immediately said in agreement, but he found it a bit amusing deep down.

It seems her highness and the crown princess really don't like each other much.

Liu Ning harrumphed. "Stop paying so much attention to all this love affair stuff and start talking about proper affairs. What do you think about King Wu's entrance into the palace?"

"Perhaps the Bi clan invited him in to reinforce their side?" Eunuch Lu asked to test the waters.

"Hmph, who else could it be but them? Kings outside the capital are absolutely not allowed to enter the capital unless summoned, and yet he used the pretext of mourning his father and brother to do so. If not for the Bi clan voicing their support, those two excuses alone wouldn't have been enough for them to enter," Liu Ning said with a sneer.

"I believe King Wu visited all sorts of different clans after entering the capital, and he also sent Madam Wu to socialize with those prestigious clans. It seems he is preparing something," Eunuch Lu reminded her.

"Hmph, everyone has already seen how King Dai courted death, and yet this brat still has aspirations to the throne?" Liu Ning remarked, sounding a bit excited to see some more chaos. "The Bi clan lass must want to use him to go against me, but has she not considered that he might betray her, and that she might not even be able to keep the position of empress anymore?"

"Your highness is wise!" Eunuch Lu remarked approvingly.

"You only know how to flatter me. How boring." Liu Ning harrumphed.

Ah Zu wouldn't just submit to me like this; only I submit to him...

Her thoughts were inscrutable, but a layer of redness appeared on her face.

Eunuch Lu spoke up and asked, "Your highness, do we really need to act against King Liang's side? He has a good reputation, and the repercussions might be great."

Liu Ling retorted coldly, "What good reputation? It's just some seniority in his clan. Ever since he was little, he received endless resources from the royal family, and yet even after all these years, he's only managed to barely scrape his way into the master rank. All of his age was wasted on that idiot. Recently, he's been relying on his high status so much that he's begun to forget his place, even frequently telling me what to do! If I don't teach him a good lesson, that old bastard will want a mile if he's given an inch."

After a pause, she added, "Besides, according to our intelligence, that guy bothered Ah Zu before in Brightmoon City, so it's a good chance to help him vent out some resentment."

Eunuch Lu still looked a bit worried.

Her highness seems to have become completely bewitched by the regent! Just King Liang alone naturally isn't a big deal, but the Eastern Palace is watching over their every move. There's also that ambitious guy, King Wu, so it'll be easy for things to go wrong...

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2062: Undefeatable

Meanwhile, In the Eastern Palace, the very person Eunuch Lu had been talking about was removing her makeup in front of a copper mirror. Her maid Rong Mo stood behind her and carefully removed the precious hair ornaments from her head one after another, and she stored them away in their respective cases.

Bi Linglong tilted her head to one side to remove an earring. She murmured with a worried expression, "I wonder just how he's doing now."

Behind her, Rong Mo asked as if she didn't know what Bi Linglong was talking about, "He? Which he is the young miss talking about?"

Bi Linglong rolled her eyes at her and retorted, "Do you want to die?"

Rong Mo giggled and said, "Don't worry, young miss. The regent is so strong, he'll definitely succeed no matter what he does."

"Even so, this time, he's facing those unknown alien monsters," Bi Linglong said; her expression revealed a hint of concern.

"The regent's cultivation is actually secondary to his ability. His greatest asset is his resourcefulness. I really can't think of how he would lose out in any situation," Rong Mo said, recalling just how badly she had suffered because of him in the past. She couldn't help but pout.

Bi Linglong smiled and said, "I remember that you used to call him reprehensible, saying that he was the most annoying person in the world. Why does it now seem as if you're using some words of praise? Could it be that you've also begun to like and admire him?"

"No way!" Rong Mo protested. Her face immediately reddened. "Isn't it because even you already became his? How can I talk badly about the young master?"

When she heard her call Zu An 'young master', Bi Linglong blushed too. It took her a moment to snap out of her embarrassment. With a light cough, she changed the subject and said, "I heard that father has been inviting King Wu into the manor as a guest quite frequently."

"That's right. That Madam Wu is really pretty, you know? Many of the Bi clan's younger disciples went to see her when they heard about that, and there were even rumors that she was prettier than you! Hmph, did those people become blind?" Rong Mo answered. Her voice was clear and fast, and she immediately spouted a bunch of drama in one go. She knew that the young miss was embarrassed, so she naturally didn't keep talking about the regent.

"We've met a few times. Madam Wu is indeed pretty, so it isn't all that surprising for there to be such a rumor," Bi Linglong said, although she didn't seem to care that much. "Compared to Madam Wu's beauty, I'm more worried about King Wu's ambition. When you have a chance, pass on a message to my father for me, to remind him of King Wu's hidden motives. He's definitely not someone who would be content to serve under another, so my father needs to remain vigilant."

"Understood. I'll pass on the message tomorrow." Rong Mo paused for a moment, but then she couldn't help but say, "Even so, everyone says King Wu came to help you face the empress dowager. If we end up creating any tension between us now, what if he goes over to the empress dowager's side?"

She was Bi Linglong's personal maid, after all, so she knew about many things. Bi Linglong didn't hide many secrets from her either, so she naturally knew more secrets than normal maids.

Bi Linglong harrumphed. "Wasn't that all because of father's decision to invite King Wu into the capital using my name? I couldn't just refuse it either. That's the only reason why the outside world has had such thoughts."

"This King Wu has some influence and can help keep the empress dowager in check to a certain degree, but his ambitions are too great. He could be going after the emperor's throne, so it might just end up hurting me instead."

"He dares?!" Rong Mo raised her brows and her voice grew louder. "Who does he think he is? With the regent and young miss still here, does he really think he could have any chance at the imperial throne?"

Bi Linglong also chuckled and said, "With King Dai and the Meng clan being examples to learn from, if he dared to have any such thoughts, his actions would be nothing but courting death."

Rong Mo moved over to her shoulder and said with a big smile, "I finally know why the young miss isn't in a rush at all. With the regent on your side, why would you still need any other support?"

Bi Linglong immediately became a bit shy. She retorted, "Damn lass, I'm going to rip that mouth off your face!"

"My mouth can't be ripped off, but as for..." Rong Mo laughed, then began to imitate what she had heard before. "Ah, I'm going to break..."

When she heard Rong Mo mimic her, Bi Linglong finally couldn't take it anymore. She got up and pounced on Rong Mo, and the two of them began to noisily fight against each other.

...

Meanwhile, in the sealed land, Zu An and the Snow Lady were traveling through the snowstorm. Along the way, there were several times when Zu An wanted to say something to her, but the Snow Lady was too cold. Not only was she cold temperature-wise, she carried an air of indifference that pushed everyone far away. He couldn't help but click his tongue and mutter, "You're even colder than Chuyan..."

When he first met Chu Chuyan, she had been famous for being an ice-cold beauty. And yet, this woman in front of him was the very embodiment of an icy mountain.

"Why do you keep staring at me?" The Snow Lady suddenly turned around and looked at him with a frown. His behavior along the way clearly hadn't escaped her notice.

"I wasn't staring at you, I was just wondering how to talk to you," Zu An said, feeling a bit embarrassed. He really felt wronged, because it would be really bad if he was mistaken by Snow Lady as a pervert.

"Can't you just talk to me if you have something to say? Why do you still have to think so hard about it? You humans really are a bit strange," the Snow Lady said, seemingly unable to understand his behavior.

Zu An was stunned, but a smile immediately appeared on his face.

I guess that's right. Interaction between people was just this simple to begin with. It was all those who came after that made it so complicated.

"I wanted to ask you about your cultivation and abilities. That way, it'll be easier for us to coordinate when we fight together," he said.

"I heard the other leaders of the Great Snowy Mountain mention that humans are the most cunning beings, so I can't tell you my exact cultivation and abilities. Otherwise, it'll be dangerous for me if you prepare to fight against me," the Snow Lady immediately replied.

Zu An was speechless. For the sake of cooperation, he could only show her a smile he believed carried the most sincerity possible and explain, "Just like the inhabitants of the Great Snowy Mountain, there are good and bad people among humans. You can't just throw them all in the same box and condemn them like that."

"But I think you're a bad person just from your smile," the Snow Lady said bluntly.

Zu An was stunned, asking, "Didn't you say that I looked pretty good?"

"Someone in the past told me that the better someone looks, the better they are at lying," the Snow Lady retorted.

"Wasn't the one who told you that also a human? You were willing to trust them, so doesn't that further prove what I'm saying?" Zu An replied.

The Snow Lady was stunned, as if her brain had short-circuited. After some time, she said, "You saw my abilities last time. They're mainly related to ice and snow. I can do practically anything you can think of."

Zu An blinked, dazed.

You can do anything I can think of? What kind of a reply is that?

The Snow Lady continued, "Instead of focusing on me, you should be more concerned with the enemy's abilities. That bone dragon's other abilities are one thing, but it has one that's especially tricky. It can reflect the injuries you inflict on it back to you threefold. The reason I was injured was because I didn't expect it to be capable of that. The attack I thought would deliver a fatal blow and grant victory was sent right back by the dragon. I was caught off guard and was seriously injured."

Zu An was stunned. Previously, she had only told him that the bone dragon didn't really fear cold. She hadn't offered this much detail. Naturally, she'd be able to deduce how strong her own attack was, as well as how much it had been multiplied after being reflected. That really made things tricky. If the bone dragon had such an ability, wouldn't that make it undefeatable?

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2063: Refinement

"What abilities does that bone dragon have? How can we win against it?" Zu An wondered, starting to feel frustrated.

"That's not my responsibility. You said you'd help me get rid of those guys, so that's for you to think about," the Snow Lady said matter-of-factly.

Zu An was speechless.

This Snow Lady is acting more and more like a human woman.

"I'll help you draw away that shadow person and stone monster, but you have to make sure to get rid of the bone dragon in that time. Otherwise, they probably won't fall for it again," the Snow Lady warned.

Zu An was a bit worried, saying, "That stone monster isn't any weaker than you, let alone that shadow person who is even stronger than you. You're injured right now, so won't you be in great danger if you try to lure them away?"

The Snow Lady shook her head and replied, "This is my home, so I have my ways of protecting myself."

At their level, she naturally wouldn't give away all of her secrets. Since they were now partners, however, Zu An chose to trust her. It seemed he had to eliminate that bone dragon as quickly as possible. After all, she wouldn't necessarily be able to hold up the two others for very long, and it would become more dangerous the longer they waited. However, the bone dragon's threefold reflection ability was a bit too ridiculous. Just how was he going to get rid of it quickly?

...

The two continued forward for some time. As he looked at the surroundings, Zu An started to feel a vague sense of familiarity. The first place he had encountered the Snow Lady in the past seemed to be nearby, and back then, he had been chased until he had absolutely no way out.

When he recalled how terrifying she was, he couldn't help but give the Snow Lady a look. She was entirely made of ice and snow. Her cheeks were clearly a bit hazy under the snowy mist, but she still looked a bit weak. He wondered if it was because she was injured.

The Snow Lady turned around and just happened to meet his gaze, asking, "Why are you looking at me again?"

Zu An said honestly, "It's just that I feel as if you're not the same as before."

"How am I different?" the Snow Lady asked in confusion.

"You're not as mean as before," Zu An said with a chuckle.

The Snow Lady remained silent for a long time before finally saying, "It seems I really was injured badly."

Zu An was speechless.

This woman's way of thinking doesn't seem to be that normal.

A while later, the Snow Lady said, "Come a bit closer to me."

"What is it?" Zu An asked. Even though he didn't know what she wanted, he still moved a bit closer to her. He stopped about a foot away.

"A bit closer," the Snow Lady said with a frown.

Zu An was stunned. *This woman isn't trying to use a honey trap against me, right?*

However, he immediately gave up on that thought when he saw the Snow Lady's emotionless face. There had to be another reason for this.

Sure enough, the Snow Lady said quietly, "We're about to approach my territory. In order to prevent you from being noticed by those guys, we have to conceal our auras."

While she spoke, a plume of snowy mist suddenly erupted beneath her feet. Then, the mist quickly extended to Zu An's side, wrapping the two within. She said, "Alright, we've now become one with the surrounding ice and snow. Those three won't be able to find us anymore. I'm injured right now, so this is the limit of my reach."

Zu An now realized what was going on. The wind and snow around them didn't block their line of sight, but their presence had indeed already disappeared from this world. No wonder she had been able to flee from those three powerful individuals. He turned slightly to glance at the Snow Lady. The two were now really close, with only a few inches between them. He could clearly sense the cold emanating from her body.

Now this is a real 'body of ice', right? I wonder if she would melt if she walked close to a volcano...

Suddenly, both of them stopped and looked up at the tallest snow-covered mountain in the distance. The sun had already risen. A trace of golden light slowly spread across the snowy mountaintop, bathing it in color. Zu An thought to himself.

Now this is what you call sunshine over a golden mountain! The photographers of my previous world climbed up freezing mountains doggedly in order to capture these kinds of scenes. Even so, not every day was beautiful like this. You could easily go more than two weeks without any results and be forced to go home.

This snowy mountain was more majestic than any mountain he had ever seen in his previous world, and it also had an elegant air to it. He really wondered just how those two entirely different feelings had managed to combine

together atop this mountain. As the mountaintop was covered in a layer of gold, it became even more astonishing.

However, most of Zu An's attention was on a gray figure slowly circling above the mountaintop - it was a several-hundred-meter long dragon. If it had been one of the giant dragons from the Ocean races, perhaps it would have added a bit of beauty to the scene; and yet, this was a skeletal bone dragon that was full of deathly energy, which completely ruined the view.

"What is it doing?" Zu An wondered in confusion, thinking, *Has that bone dragon gone mad? Why does it keep circling the mountaintop?*

The Snow Lady was also a bit baffled at first. Immediately after, she closed her eyes and seemed to be communicating with something. A while later, she opened her eyes and said, "It's refining this entire mountain!"

"Refining the entire snowy mountain?" Zu An exclaimed in shock. Was there something special about this snowy mountain? Otherwise, why would the dragon use up so much energy to refine it? Also, just what kind of method was it using?

"The death energy around its entire body has already begun to corrode this entire snowy mountain. We can't let it continue! We have to get rid of it as quickly as possible!" the Snow Lady exclaimed, sounding a bit panicked. "By the way, I can't sense that shadow person and the stone monster. Can you sense their auras?"

Zu An closed his eyes when he heard her say that. He sent his vast divine sense in all directions. A while later, he opened his eyes and shook his head, saying, "I can't sense them either. This really is strange."

"Then there's no problem. The snowy mountain told me that those two seem to have left for some reason. They seem to be preparing to refine other places," the Snow Lady quickly said.

Zu An was surprised. Three powerful beings were going to refine three separate places? That perfectly matched up with the three divine artifacts. He wondered if there was any connection there. Suddenly realizing something important, he asked, "You can communicate with the snowy mountain?"

The Snow Lady gave him a strange look and replied, "This is my home, so of course I can."

Zu An was speechless. He was becoming more and more curious as to just what kind of being the Snow Lady really was. She had previously mentioned that as long as the Great Snowy Mountain existed, she wouldn't die. Could it be that the Great Snowy Mountain had developed sentience, and that she was its incarnation?

The Snow Lady quickly said, "The other two not being here right now is good news. I can coordinate with you now. Have you thought of any solutions?"

Zu An nodded, saying, "I do have a way, but I need your cooperation."

"Sure, what do you need me to do?" the Snow Lady asked, sounding a bit excited. She really wanted to get these intruders out of her home as quickly as possible.

"We need to do this..." Zu An moved closer to the Snow Lady's ear and whispered. They were now so close that he could clearly see her sparkling ear. He was briefly stunned.

Why is this ice doll looking more and more like a person?

Meanwhile, the bone dragon was still doing its best to refine the snowy mountain below. When it sensed that its death energy was gradually corroding the Great Snowy Mountain, a proud smile appeared on its sinister face. This entire place would be completely refined before much longer.

Suddenly, an ice-cold voice called out, "Ugly dragon, stop right there!"

The bone dragon raised its head and saw a beautiful snowy figure standing at the peak of the mountain across from its own. Its attention was immediately drawn. It said, "Last time, you fled with your life by a fluke. Who would have thought that you would come back to throw your life away?"

"You had your companions with you last time, and I was distracted. That was why I was injured. You're alone today, so let's fight a proper battle," the Snow Lady said coldly.

The bone dragon seemed as if it had heard something utterly absurd. It retorted, "You weren't a match for me even when you were at your strongest. You're seriously injured right now, so aren't you just courting death?" However, it voiced its surprise midway through, saying, "Hold on, you clearly got away last time. How could you possibly do something so stupid?"

Zu An, who was hiding in the dark, was alarmed.

Could it be that this bone dragon saw through our plan?

However, the bone dragon burst out into laughter and said, "I got it! It seems you sensed that I was already about to completely refine this snowy mountain, so you had no choice but to come. Since you've come to die, don't blame me for being rude!"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2064: Unassuring Circumstances

As soon as the massive bone dragon spoke, it rushed straight at the snowy peak on the other side.

The Snow Lady's expression was cold. She didn't seem to move at all, but the entire snowy mountain seemed to tremble. Endless snow came tumbling down in an avalanche, rolling forth in waves before suddenly condensing into a pair of giant hands. They reached out from the surging avalanche and grabbed the flying bone dragon out of the sky.

The bone dragon roared in anger. Its entire body flailed frantically, and its long tail suddenly lashed out at one of the hands grabbing at it. Every single segment of its body was razor-sharp, and when dozens of sharpened bones combined together, they resembled both a whip and a massive blade. The hands were nearly destroyed the moment it made contact.

Immediately after, the bone dragon's tail segments began to spin like an electric drill, completely destroying one icy hand. Then, it thrashed at the hand that remained. Even though the large hand tried to grip its tail, it couldn't withstand the drilling stabs, quickly becoming filled with holes. In the end, it couldn't hold on and maintain the shape of a hand anymore, ultimately turning back into wind and snow.

The Snow Lady's expression changed. She quickly kicked off the ground and rushed at the other snowy mountain.

"You want to run?" The bone dragon laughed maliciously. With a swing of its body, it quickly rushed at the Snow Lady. With the difference in their speeds, it was confident it could catch her within ten breaths of time.

Suddenly, the thick snow below burst open. A figure rushed straight at its head like a shooting star. The longsword in his hand turned into a streak of white light that bore down on the dragon's neck with terrifying momentum.

The bone dragon finally realized what was happening. It turned out the Snow Lady had been baiting it to chase after her, and she had even used such a flashy attack, all to use the endless ice and snow to cover the true killer's figure!

Just where did she find such a terrifying assistant?

Even so, there was no more time for it to think. It mustered all of its strength to avoid the attack. However, this sword skill was too profound. No matter how it evaded, the sword continued to aim right at its vitals, and kept closing in at a speed it couldn't outrun! The dragon was horrified. How could a world of this rudimentary level have a swordsman with such profound cultivation?

The sword finally stabbed into the weakest bone in the dragon's neck. A resplendent streak of white light flickered past, and the bone dragon's massive body crashed into the valley. Its tremendous weight made it fall so far, it couldn't be seen anymore.

Zu An landed nearby. He had heard the Snow Lady describe the bone dragon's ability and was confused at first, but he quickly realized something. If its ability really didn't have any weaknesses, wouldn't it be invincible? However, judging from what the Snow Lady had told him, that shadow person clearly had an even higher rank.

After thinking about it, he'd figured that even though the bone dragon's threefold reflection ability was strong, it probably couldn't always be active. As such, the plan he discussed with the Snow Lady was to have her cover him first, to give him a chance to assassinate it in a single blow. That way, the bone dragon would die without even getting the chance to use its ability. The Snow Lady had been a bit doubtful, but Zu An had enough confidence in his own sword that he'd been sure he could definitely seize that chance.

Sure enough, it was as he expected. The bone dragon's retaliation wasn't something that could be activated at will. His plan had succeeded! Even so, he couldn't bring himself to feel happy at all.

"What's wrong?" the Snow Lady asked as she flew over to his side. When she saw that he hadn't suffered any retaliation, she couldn't help but sigh in relief.

Zu An shook his head. He reached out to grab a pair of scales that had fallen. They had originally been one scale, but they'd been cut in half by his sword. There had been complex patterns carved on it, and the surface had previously flickered with glimmers of light. Now, it was cut in half and the light had disappeared.

"You actually managed to destroy my protection charm! You damned couple, I'll definitely flay you alive and rip out your tendons! I'll make you regret coming into this world!" A furious roar echoed through the valley. Immediately after, there was a huge explosion as a long figure rushed into the sky.

You have successfully trolled the Bramble Bone Dragon for +999 +999 +999...

The bone dragon's two eye sockets erupted with two eerie flames. It stared resentfully at Zu An and the Snow Lady.

Zu An frowned.

How do these guys have so many life-saving measures?

He had already encountered similar events several times. It seemed he had to start taking these possibilities into consideration in the future too. Fortunately, judging from the dragon's reaction, the protective charm was extremely difficult to obtain, so it probably didn't have any more.

"Just where did you come from? How could there be a human this powerful in this world?" the bone dragon wondered as it stared at Zu An. It was feeling really nervous. After all, it actually hadn't been able to avoid that sword at all after being ambushed! How ridiculous was that?

It suddenly thought of something. As it looked at Zu An, its eyes narrowed and it asked, "Are you the one who killed the War Priest?"

Zu An raised his brows and replied, "Oh? It seems you monsters do know each other a bit after all."

The Bramble Bone Dragon suddenly backed up by around a kilometer, and only then felt a sense of safety. It said, "Hmph, I definitely don't want to mysteriously die in this low-level world like that War Priest guy. There's no chance for you to ambush me anymore."

The Snow Lady warned Zu An, "Be careful. It's already activated the reflection skill."

Zu An noticed that there were some profound designs faintly visible around the entire Bramble Bone Dragon's body. They vaguely formed a sort of protective cover.

"Why are you whispering among yourselves over there? Why don't you come and fight against me if you have the skills?" The ghostly flames in the bone dragon's eyes moved as it taunted them in a rather despicable manner.

Zu An sighed and said, "When you make such a despicable request, it's really hard for me to not want to grant you all your wishes."

He instantly reappeared by the bone dragon's neck as soon as he said that. A black glint appeared in his palm as he pressed forward.

At first, the Bramble Bone Dragon had intended to avoid the attack, but when it remembered what kind of abilities it had, it decided to raise its head and just take the initiative to receive that attack head-on.

Attack me, go for it! The harder you hit me, the worse your injuries will become!

Suddenly, the palm pressed against its neck. A streak of light erupted from the patterns all over the Bramble Bone Dragon's body, making it tremble. Its incredibly sharp tail struck directly at Zu An.

However, Zu An had already retreated to a safe distance. He frowned inwardly. Just now, he had used the Heaven Devouring Sutra. He'd been thinking that since the dragon reflected damage, he wouldn't deal damage, and would instead suck the power out of its body. He hadn't expected that strange ability to even be able to block something like this, though.

The Bramble Bone Dragon looked at him with a hint of fear, exclaiming, “You actually have the Taotie’s power within you? Thank goodness it wasn’t strong enough, or else I might have really been killed here.”

Zu An was surprised. This wasn’t the first time he had heard similar things. It seemed the Taotie had quite the reputation in this universe! It was clearly not just one of the minor monsters he had seen before in the Yinxu Secret Dungeon. They weren’t strong enough to become this famous.

“Even though you now know that I have the Taotie’s power, you still dare to make me your enemy?” Zu An remarked. He knew that there was no way the dragon would answer him if he asked it directly, so he deliberately spoke like that.

The Bramble Bone Dragon was starting to hesitate. It whispered to itself, “Could it be that this world has already been targeted by the Taotie?”

“You idiot, that human is clearly trying to dupe you. You even believe something like that? Is your brain really only the size of a walnut?” a humanoid with a scorpion tail called out after suddenly appearing in the distance.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2065: I Actually Died Just Like That?

Chapter 2065: I Actually Died Just Like That?

“Damn scorpion, you’re not allowed to say that my brain is only the size of a walnut!” the Bramble Bone Dragon protested, seemingly having had its sore spot struck. It immediately erupted in anger.

“The truth always hurts the most,” the scorpion man said while snickering.

“You’re courting death!” The Bramble Bone Dragon roared and charged at the scorpion man.

One of the scorpion man's claws clamped down on the mountain peak it was standing on. That segment of the mountain was instantly broken, and he threw it at the bone dragon.

Boom!

The Bramble Bone Dragon's body was incredibly tough. The enormous snowy mountaintop exploded to pieces from the impact, but the dragon also stopped in its tracks.

The scorpion man asked with a sneer, "Is your intention to fight against me and let those two over there have it easy, or are we going to get rid of this foreign enemy first?"

The Bramble Bone Dragon thought to itself for a bit. The fighting intent in its eyes withdrew and it said, "Hmph, I'll settle things with you once I've dealt with them."

At first, it had wanted to warn the scorpion man that this human was the one who had killed the War Priest, but after remembering that the scorpion man had actually humiliated it by calling it 'walnut brain', it didn't say anything. Instead, it said, "Then I'll deal with this tricky Snow Lady."

The scorpion man said, "You already fought against the Snow Lady last time, so just let me test her out a bit this time."

Hmph, does this idiot dragon really think I don't know that the Snow Lady is injured? Even though that human's aura looks weak, he's definitely not an easy opponent. On the contrary, the Snow Lady is already seriously injured, so she's easy enough to defeat.

It didn't wait for the bone dragon to reply and dashed straight at the Snow Lady.

The Snow Lady quickly said to Zu An, "I'll do my best to stall it, so you have to deal with this bone dragon as quickly as possible!"

Afterward, a blizzard rushed forth from below her, and she faced the scorpion man. The two sides exchanged several moves in an instant. The Snow Lady actually wasn't at a disadvantage, at least for the time being.

The bone dragon said mockingly, "Scorpion King, you were blowing your own horn, and yet you can't even win against a seriously injured woman? Do you have any sense of shame?"

Zu An didn't feel happy about that at all, because he knew the Snow Lady had probably used some secret method that could temporarily make herself stronger. Those kinds of skills definitely required a severe price to be paid after, and the longer this dragged on, the more danger she would be in.

Sure enough, the Scorpion King cursed and said, "Can't you tell that she wants to end this battle against me as quickly as possible? Do you think my brain is as small as yours? Like hell I'm going to be stupid enough to fight her head on right now!"

He raised his two pincers, then murmured a series of cryptic words that were difficult to understand. Then, black energy surged all around him. Rows after rows of scorpion soldiers emerged from the ground. Every single one was over two meters tall; they were clad in armor, with shields in their left hands and spears in their right. The tips of the spears resembled scorpion stingers, drawing out a treacherous and dangerous arc.

When he saw that, Zu An's expression changed a bit. *The Scorpion King's ability is summoning?*

Individually, these scorpion soldiers were all even stronger than the Fiend races' most elite Golden Crow Guards, and they were greater in number too. They were strong enough to threaten even earth immortals. It was obvious that the Scorpion King didn't intend for these soldiers to kill the Snow Lady, but rather just to wear her down. As time went on, the Snow Lady would only become weaker and weaker, and that was when it would strike.

There was no happiness or sadness to be seen on the Snow Lady's face. With a wave of her hand, snowflakes fluttered. When they fell on the snowy land, the accumulated snow seemed to manifest a summoning as well. Snowman soldiers stood up one after another, forming up with orderly gaits. They faced the incoming scorpion army, the two sides quickly clashing.

It was clear that the scorpion soldiers were much more agile, but the snowman soldiers had the home field advantage. Between that and their unique constitution, which meant they didn't need to fear the poisons of the scorpion soldiers, the two sides were actually evenly matched.

The Bramble Bone Dragon roared with laughter. “Damned scorpion, is that all you've got?”

The Scorpion King’s expression grew a bit unpleasant. After being looked down upon by this idiot, his ego couldn’t take it. He roared angrily, “Then let’s see who can defeat their enemy first!”

It threw aside its misgivings and charged straight at the Snow Lady. It had to have cost her quite a bit to summon so many snowmen, so this was the perfect chance to rush in.

The Bramble Bone Dragon didn’t dare to fall behind. It rushed at Zu An and attacked him while taunting him provocatively, “Why aren’t you hitting me, why aren’t you hitting me...”

Zu An naturally chose to satisfy its request. As he attacked, his fist flickered with layer upon layer of white light.

Boom boom boom!

The Bramble Bone Dragon’s head rang from the strikes, but there wasn’t any pain to be seen on its face. On the contrary, it was getting more and more excited as it said, “Tsk tsk, your skills seem to perfectly counter me. If not for my armor, you might really have defeated me.”

Zu An wiped at the blood around his lips. Just then, he had used the Primordial Origin Sutra, which was extremely effective against the undead. However, his opponent had reflected all the damage threefold. Even though he was already prepared for that and used the Heaven Devouring Sutra to absorb away the reflected power, how strong were his attacks now? When they were reflected threefold, even he found it a bit hard to handle.

Even so, he didn’t hesitate at all and sent his fist flying again.

“Why aren’t you using your sword from before? It looks like you’re not stupid,” the Bramble Bone Dragon said, sounding a bit disappointed.

If this brat used that sword, he might have already been sliced in two.

It rushed forth again as it spoke. It didn’t try to defend its vulnerable areas, because the harder the enemy hit it, the better things would be.

Just like that, the two fought for a while. The Bramble Bone Dragon was completely unharmed, but Zu An soon coughed up blood continuously. The Bramble Bone Dragon roared with laughter, taunting, "Did you come to hit me or did you come to hurt yourself? I didn't expect you humans to have this kind of fetish."

Zu An coughed out a mouthful of blood. It had already been a long time since he was last injured. The feeling of vomiting blood really was nostalgic.

Suddenly, a cry filled the air, as the Snow Lady finally couldn't hold on anymore. A moment of carelessness caused her to be struck down by the Scorpion King. She plummeted toward the ground.

Zu An quickly reached out to grab her, using a gentle force to neutralize her terrifying momentum. Otherwise, she would likely be injured even more badly if she crashed into the ground like that. Even so, her momentum was too great, and Zu An wasn't in the best condition from his wounds either. He couldn't completely stop her and lost his own center of gravity. The two of them rolled across the ground several times before finally stopping.

"Are you alright?" Zu An quickly asked.

The Snow Lady didn't reply. She quickly pushed herself away from him. Perhaps Zu An was imagining things, but there seemed to be a faint blush on her face. He'd thought that her body would be extremely heavy due to being made of ice and snow. But when they made contact, he discovered that she was much lighter than he'd imagined.

"I'm fine. I won't die. You'll have to work a bit harder on your side, though," the Snow Lady said. Suddenly, her expression changed. She pushed Zu An to one side and cried out, "Be careful!"

Just then, the Bramble Bone Dragon's sharp tail had lashed out. Fortunately, the Snow Lady's push allowed Zu An to narrowly avoid the attack. Meanwhile, a deep hole appeared where he had been standing.

However, Zu An just happened to be pushed in the Scorpion King's direction. When he saw that, the Scorpion King, who had been chasing after the Snow Lady, snickered maliciously. Its ink-black tail stabbed straight at the middle of Zu An's back. The poison on its tail could bring down many terrifying beings in the universe; of course, if it really ended up fighting against those guys, it probably wouldn't be given the chance to use the poison.

But this brat doesn't seem to be on those beings' level.

It already foresaw the human turning into a puddle of goo from the poison. But just then, the human suddenly vanished.

The Scorpion King was alarmed. It quickly brandished its pincers behind it to stop the ancient sword it sensed rushing toward it.

"The sword isn't bad, I'll gladly..." the Scorpion King said proudly, but its expression suddenly changed. It lowered its head and saw a short, pitch-black dagger by its abdomen.

It turned out everything else was just a ruse to hide this real attack!

Even so, how much damage could such a small dagger do?

After all, it had tremendous resistance against poisons. Even if it was poisoned, it wouldn't do much.

It was about to laugh with ridicule when its entire body stiffened. Strange and ancient runes appeared around it, and it dropped straight from the sky.

Its last thought was:

I actually died just like that?

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2066: Big Bro, Stop Hitting Me, Please!

The Scorpion King was powerful. Even though he wasn't one of the universe's greatest beings, he was still an overlord of a region. That fact was reinforced by the lethality of his venomous tail, which could pose a threat even to some of the highest-level beings. He had invaded many worlds and brought upon them calamity and destruction, becoming more and more powerful and obtaining even more special abilities in the process.

He clearly had countless formidable skills he hadn't used yet, but he had actually died just like that! He'd died in such a weak world, in the hands of a creature he saw as food.

I can't accept this! That damned walnut brain scammed me!

...

The Scorpion King fell from the sky, filled with disbelief and endless regret. He had lost his life right there and then!

The Snow Lady gave Zu An a look of astonishment. She knew just how strong the Scorpion King was from fighting against him for so long. And yet he was killed in a single exchange?

On the other hand, the ghost flames in the Bramble Bone Dragon's eye sockets were practically about to pop out. It had often bickered with the Scorpion King, and yet neither could do much against the other. How was someone like that actually killed so easily?

Even though the Scorpion King had often insulted its intelligence, making it want to strangle that scorpion bastard, the Bramble Bone Dragon still found the Scorpion King's sudden death a bit hard to accept. If it had known things would turn out like this, it would have warned it that Zu An was the one who had killed the War Priest. In that instant, the Bramble Bone Dragon felt some regret.

Even so, that regret was soon replaced by excitement. Now that the annoying scorpion died, no one else would antagonize it in the future. Once the time came to split the loot of this world, there would be one less competitor.

It looked at that pitch-black dagger in Zu An's hand and said, "That dagger in your hand seems to contain the powerful death curse of a death deity or other great being. It is formidable, but unfortunately, it is useless against me."

It seemed to be saying that to give itself more confidence. It even straightened its back a bit while speaking.

Right, I'm not even scared of this dagger, so what do I have to be so hesitant for?

Besides, as long as it killed Zu An, it would obtain that miraculous dagger. It could even refine the weapon into its tail to drastically increase its own strength. It could even be able to seize a top three spot within its circle! When it thought about how wonderful that would be, its mouth inadvertently cracked open into a big grin.

Zu An put away the Poisonous Prick. What the dragon said was true. Since it was already undead, the weapon would naturally be useless. However, the white radiance of the Primordial Origin Sutra appeared on his fist again as he replied, "The dagger might not work, but what about this?"

A hint of fear appeared in the Bramble Bone Dragon's eyes, but it quickly calmed down. It said, "That skill of yours does counter me, but unfortunately, I have my reflective armor's protection!"

It actually found that quite strange. Why did this human have the keepsake of a death deity, but also a skill of light? Those two forces were always mortal enemies, so how could they both be on the same person?

Suddenly, it no longer had time to think about that, because Zu An's fist had already arrived. However, it remarked with a grin, "You're using brute force again? I'm just going to stand here and let you hit me!"

Zu An's fists bombarded the dragon's body, while it didn't move at all. Instead, it was Zu An who coughed out blood repeatedly.

A hint of worry appeared in the Snow Lady's expression.

He'll be in danger if this continues, right...

However, the battle she just fought against the Scorpion King had triggered her internal injuries. She couldn't help even if she wanted to. She could only try to accumulate some strength in preparation to bring Zu An away at any time.

A long time passed just like that. The Bramble Bone Dragon was starting to become a bit alarmed, saying, "Hey, why aren't you dying yet?"

Normally, when so many vicious attacks were reflected, they would have already blasted a human into a bloody mist. Even though Zu An's injuries weren't light, there wasn't any sign of him dying! Furthermore, he was getting more and more ferocious the more he fought, as if his condition was starting to improve.

Zu An wiped away blood from his lips with the back of his hand. He replied with a chuckle, "Even you haven't died yet, so how can I die?"

His powerful constitution and regenerative prowess were a crucial factor. Even though he got injured from his own attacks being reflected, their primordial ki and his own techniques came from the same source to begin with, so those injuries were lessened as a result. Besides that, his natural regeneration was powerful, so he always maintained a certain level of equilibrium.

As the attacks continued for longer and longer, things even seemed to be slowly shifting, to the point that he was regenerating faster than his injuries accumulated. Meanwhile, it was the Bramble Bone Dragon's aura that grew weaker and weaker. It was already tottering on the verge of collapse from the shower of attacks.

"You're mad, completely mad! I'm not going to continue this game with you anymore!" the Bramble Bone Dragon cried, its voice shaking a bit. It suddenly gave up on attacking and fled into the distance.

"Do you think it'll be that easy for you to get away?" Zu An retorted, a smile appearing on his lips as if to say 'as expected'.

Actually, when he first heard that this bone dragon could reflect an attack threefold, he'd also felt a lot of pressure, as if he couldn't possibly win. And yet, when he thought more about it, how could the laws of the world permit the existence of a skill without any flaw? Besides, the dragon wasn't even able to reign undefeated in the world of monsters through relying on its skill. That meant it definitely had to have a weakness.

At first, he'd tried all kinds of attacks and eliminated one possibility after another. Eventually, he'd deduced that a set price had to be paid in order for the bone dragon to use its ability. That cost could manifest in all sorts of ways. Even though he couldn't figure out what it was, there was something that he was sure of, which was that the Bramble Bone Dragon couldn't pay that cost limitlessly.

That was why he had endured the injuries and continued to pressure his opponent into doing so, knowing that the key to victory here would hinge upon who gave in first. Fortunately, Zu An's body had already been tempered by the Primordial Origin Sutra several times. It was already stronger than that of a dragon, and together with his powerful regenerative ability, he had managed to last until the end.

The Bramble Bone Dragon frantically fled into the distance, but why would Zu An ever fear another in terms of speed? He used Grandgale and his position-swapping skill in quick succession and quickly caught up to it. The purification power of the Primordial Origin Sutra surrounded his fist as he unleashed punches on its head once more.

The Bramble Bone Dragon's special patterns flickered continuously. Zu An could sense that the reflected power was growing weaker and weaker, which made him more and more confident. The power of his punches also grew stronger and stronger. In the end, the dragon's patterns erupted into a burst of dazzling brilliance before fading out completely.

Just then, Zu An's fist landed on the dragon's head. Wisps of white smoke appeared, and the dragon screamed bitterly in pain. The destructive power of primordial ki against the dead was too powerful!

"Big bro, I was wrong! Stop hitting me, please!"

"Didn't you tell me to keep hitting you just a moment ago?"

"Big bro, it was this little dragon who was wrong just now! I hope that big bro can be open-minded enough to not mind the wrongs of someone petty like me..."

"But the way you acted earlier was too despicable. I just can't let it go without beating the shit out of you."

"..."

The two ran around just like that, with one fleeing and one chasing. The Bramble Bone Dragon became slower and slower, and its pleading became quieter and quieter. It cried out softly, "Big bro, I really can't take it anymore... I'll really die if you keep going..."

"Then why don't you first tell me why you were trying to refine that snowy mountain?" Zu An asked; he reduced the force he was using a bit, but didn't stop completely. Otherwise, the dragon's reflective ability could recover again.

"That's because boss said that this snowy mountain was the final barrier, and that as long as we refined it, he would have a way to fully unlock the seal!" the Bramble Bone Dragon hurriedly replied.

Zu An was startled. It turned out the monsters' invasion had already gotten this far and they were going to fully unlock the seal soon! He asked, "Who is your boss?"

"Boss is boss...?" the dragon tentatively answered.

Bang!

It got a huge punch in return, almost putting out the ghost flames in its eye sockets. It hurriedly said, "The Snow Lady has seen him before! It's the one who was shining all over!"

"Oh?" Zu An thought, *No wonder the Snow Lady couldn't see their true appearance through the light.* He asked, "What is your boss' name? How does his strength compare to yours and that scorpion's?"

"I don't know the boss' name because I spent less time with him. Everyone calls him boss and no one dares to speak his name directly," the Bramble Bone Dragon said. "As for his strength, we wouldn't be a match for him even if all of us worked together."

Zu An immediately felt discouraged.

Could it be that this boss or whatever's strength has already reached a level where even his name can't be spoken?

In the great tomb where he met Jing Teng, there had been many powerful beings whose names he couldn't even utter. Even now, he still had a deep impression of the pressure they had given him.

"Then what kinds of skills does your boss have?" Zu An asked after thinking to himself for a bit.

"Will you let me go if I tell you?" the Bramble Bone Dragon asked as its ghost flames swirled around.

"As long as your intelligence has enough value, I can consider letting you go," Zu An said seriously.

"Will you make a vow on that?" the Bramble Bone Dragon asked; it didn't really believe him. It just felt that these words were too ambiguous.

“Fine, I’ll make the vow,” Zu An said. In truth, he didn’t really mind. Either way, he was quite good at things like wordplay. He had trapped quite a few people with it in the past.

When the Bramble Bone Dragon heard his vow, it sighed in relief and asked, “Then can you not hit me first? I really am about to be burned to death.”

Primordial ki had a powerful scorching purification power against the undead. Naturally, it didn't feel particularly good.

“The faster you speak, the less pain you’ll feel,” Zu An said without stopping. He couldn't give a fellow like this even a moment to catch its breath.

“I’ll talk, I’ll talk! His ability is...”

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2067: The Nails of the Seal

“All those that are seen by him will...” the Bramble Bone Dragon began to say, but suddenly a look of horror suddenly appeared on its face. It screamed, “No, I didn’t sell you out! Please don’t...”

Before it could even finish speaking, a speck of light suddenly appeared between its brows. Immediately after, that light spread throughout its entire body, turning its dark bones bright. A second later, its body turned into specks of starlight that faded into nothingness.

Zu An was speechless. He had finally caught a living captive, and one that had both low intelligence and weak moral principles, no less. He'd been about to get some useful intelligence out of its mouth, and yet it died just like that?

It seemed the Bramble Bone Dragon had been placed under a restriction by its boss ahead of time. As long as it did anything that betrayed the boss, it would immediately lose its life from the restriction on the spot. The dragon was already powerful, and yet the boss was actually able to mysteriously set up a restriction inside its body. It really was hard to imagine just how powerful the boss was.

Any target that they saw would... They would what? If they died immediately after seeing him, there would be no point in fighting at all.

Yu Yanluo actually had a similar skill. All those who were caught in her Medusa Eye would turn to stone. And yet, her ability definitely had a limit, which was that they had to be of a similar level to her. If the target's cultivation far exceeded hers, she wouldn't be able to petrify them and could at most cover their skin with a layer of stone. If she forced the petrification process on an opponent much stronger than her, she would lose her own life in the process.

The boss monster's strength was definitely far greater than anything Yu Yanluo could compare to. Being caught in his gaze sounded like a particularly risky prospect. Unfortunately, it was too late to think about any of that further; Zu AN could only return to the snowy mountain for the time being.

The Snow Lady had just adjusted her condition a bit, preparing to head over to help. When she saw him return, she couldn't help but feel surprised. She asked, "Did that bone dragon get away?"

Zu An shook his head and told her roughly what had happened, saying, "I didn't expect that radiant being to be so cunning and set up a restriction in the Bramble Bone Dragon's body."

"That's something no one could have expected. The fact that you could defeat both the Scorpion King and the Bramble Bone Dragon is already quite amazing," the Snow Lady said. Her reasoning seemed to be far simpler than Zu An's.

Zu An's eyes lit up, however. He quickly flew into the valley and dragged out the Scorpion King's corpse.

"What are you going to do? Are you going to eat it?" The Snow Lady followed and asked in confusion. As she looked at the Scorpion King's ugly corpse, she had an expression of disgust.

"Of course not. But this scorpion tail hook is excellent stuff," Zu An said, chuckling as he tried to remove the tail using condensed sword ki. However, the sword ki actually only left faint traces on its surface.

"Hm? It seems his body armor is also good," Zu An said quite happily.

Previously, the Bramble Bone Dragon was completely burned away by that mysterious speck of light, so he had practically fought for nothing. He'd even been injured quite badly as a result. Fortunately, there was still the Scorpion King. Judging from their brief battle, he had already noticed that this tail was special. The tip seemed to be poisonous, and when the hook approached, it had covered his body with goosebumps. That was his body's instinctive reaction, warning him that the poison could threaten his very life.

Even though the Primordial Origin Sutra granted him poison immunity, after fighting against these monsters again and again, he also realized that the universe was far greater than he could ever have imagined. His body was immune to the poisons of this world, but it wouldn't necessarily be immune to all the special poisons in the universe.

He took out the Tai'e Sword and sliced down with sword ki. The Scorpion King's armor wasn't able to do much anymore, allowing Zu An to sever his tail. Even though he knew that the creature was already dead, Zu An still felt a shiver when he looked at that ink-black tail hook. He carefully stored it away in the Brilliant Glass Bead.

Immediately after, he brandished the Tai'e Sword again, cutting off the Scorpion King's armored shell along its joints' vein lines. Its defensive properties seemed quite good, and it could be made into a nice set of armor. He then took the scorpion's pincers as well. Even though they weren't as precious as the stinger, they were still excellent for making weapons.

He stored the items away one by one, then gave the remaining flesh a look. He figured it could be good for refining artifacts, or perhaps it would be needed for a goddess' breakthrough, so tossing it would be too much of a waste. As such, he also stored it away after some hesitation.

When she saw that, the Snow Lady had a look of disdain as she muttered, "And I thought you said you weren't eating it."

For better or for worse, this Scorpion King was still a powerful opponent she had fought against. And yet, now that Zu An had killed it, he didn't waste a single bit. That really felt strange to her.

Zu An chuckled. He didn't explain anything and stretched out a hand toward her, asking, "It's now time for you to give me the Soul Capturing Jade, right?"

The Snow Lady hesitated, but in the end, she still took out the Soul Capturing Jade from within her cleavage and handed it to him.

Zu An received the Soul Capturing Jade from her and felt the icy cold sensation in his palm. He reflexively gave her chest a look. The Snow Lady stared coldly at him.

Zu An coughed lightly and said, "Pleasure doing business, hope to see you again." After cupping his hands in greeting, he prepared to leave.

However, the Snow Lady called out, "Can you help me with something else? The snowy mountain told me that there are two others who are refining the other snowy peaks. If they succeed, huge unexpected changes might happen to the Great Snowy Mountain."

Zu An became silent, seemingly thinking about something.

The Snow Lady looked at him quietly, looking a bit flustered.

Could this be the nervousness humans speak of?

"You previously said that as long as the Great Snowy Mountain existed, you wouldn't die, right?" Zu An asked.

The Snow Lady voiced her confirmation.

"Then if some major change happened to the Great Snowy Mountain, would you be in danger too?" Zu An continued.

"I don't know," the Snow Lady said, shaking her head.

Zu An was speechless. This was related to her own safety, and yet she was actually talking as if it wasn't that important. After thinking to himself for a bit, his eyes landed on the snowy mountain in front of him. He said, "Let's take a look and see what that bone dragon was really refining first."

For some reason, he just felt a sense of familiarity from this Snow Lady. Could it really be just because she was pretty? Zu An had considered that before, but no matter how pretty she was, she was still a being of snow. It was probably her special constitution that was more unique.

Even so, that alone wouldn't make him forget about more important matters. He recalled what the Bramble Bone Dragon had told him just now, that its

boss had told them to refine three different peaks, and that as long as they did so, they could completely destroy the seal. That seal was probably the same one used to repel the foreign monsters in ancient times. Thus, stopping them from refining these snowy mountains was completely in line with what he needed to do himself anyway.

“Is there anything unusual about these mountains?” Zu An asked.

“Unusual?” The Snow Lady thought for a bit and said, “I’ve resided in the Great Snowy Mountain region for countless years, but I’ve never felt that there was anything special about them. The only thing that might be a bit special might be that these three mountains are the three highest peaks of the whole area. Besides that, their heights are all the same.”

If it were anyone else, they wouldn't necessarily be able to accurately deduce the heights of these three mountains. The Snow Lady and the Great Snowy Mountain region had a special connection, so it was only natural for her to know.

Zu An was speechless.

Not even something that distinctive is enough for you to consider them different?

He flew straight into the sky to observe the surrounding terrain. Knowledge from ‘One Drop of Heaven’s Essence’ appeared in his mind. The mountains in front of him gradually turned into specks and connected lines.

“Hm?” Zu An suddenly voiced his surprise.

He had thought that this snowy peak would be a special mountain like a dragon vein, and yet he discovered that it was nothing of the sort. Rather, the smaller mountains formed a connected dragon’s vein. It was actually this peak that seemed to have interrupted it. It was like a nail that had dropped down straight from the sky and stabbed straight into the dragon vein!

When he followed the trail of the snowy mountains, he didn’t even need the Snow Lady’s explanations to determine the approximate locations of the other two peaks. The three peaks were clearly special. They were like three sealing nails that locked the entire Great Snowy Mountain region down.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2068: Full Power Unleashed

The Snow Lady flew over to his side just then. She looked at the ruined gray color all over the mountain and said worriedly, "This snowy mountain has already been corroded by the Bramble Bone Dragon's death energy. I don't have any way of getting rid of such strong death energy. Do you have a way?"

She'd seen that the attacks Zu An used carried a white light that seemed to be good at countering the Bramble Bone Dragon, which was why she looked on expectantly.

Zu An nodded and said, "Let me give it a try."

He landed on the mountain, then used his skills to transfer the primordial ki of the world. His cultivation was now much stronger, so vast amounts of primordial ki quickly covered the entire snowy mountain. The ash-gray death energy was like a mouse fleeing from a cat as it quickly retreated. After an hour, he fully cleaned out the death energy, and the snowy mountain recovered its sparkling jade-like luster.

The Snow Lady was really happy to see that, exclaiming, "Thank you so much!"

"It's not a big deal," Zu An said.

Suddenly, he thought of something. He took out the Soul Capturing Jade and saw the surface shine slightly and even tremble a bit, as if there was something summoning it. He unfolded his hand, and the Soul Capturing Jade flew into the sky on its own, eventually suspending itself above the mountain peak. Then, it erupted with sparkling radiance that surrounded the entire snowy mountain.

In response, the mountain seemed to have been summoned as well. It gradually began to tremble and shine. In the end, a few profound runes appeared on its surface.

Zu An's skill in formations and runes had already reached a completely different level of proficiency, but he still couldn't understand the meaning of

the runes. They seemed a bit similar to some of the runes in the great tomb he had visited with Jing Teng. It seemed they had been used to seal and restrict this place. He really wondered just who could have been so incredible, that they could use so few runes to achieve such a powerful suppressive effect.

The Soul Capturing Jade spun in place for a while. Then, it descended with extraordinary speed, entering straight through the snow covering the mountaintop. Zu An released his divine sense and was shocked to discover that it hadn't stopped in the snow, rather entering straight into the mountain. His divine sense couldn't reach inside.

The Soul Capturing Jade and the mountain became one, and the entire peak blossomed with golden light. Then, an invisible wave spread out in all directions, extending far into the distance. Even though there wasn't any concrete proof, Zu An could vaguely sense that this region seemed to have become a bit more stable.

When he saw that, he finally understood a bit of what was going on. Sometimes, no matter how hard one looked for something, one wouldn't be able to find it; and yet, after one stopped trying, it would come effortlessly. He had been wondering how to use the three sealing objects, but now, it seemed they were to be used for none other than the three peaks. He hadn't expected that helping the Snow Lady would so perfectly line up with his own goals.

The Snow Lady arrived at his side and said with a sigh, "I never expected that the snowy mountain would have such secrets, and yet I had no idea at all."

When he saw the sunlight shine on her, covering her in a faint golden glow, Zu An felt that she looked even more beautiful. He quickly focused and asked, "Where are the other two snowy mountains? We should hurry over, or else things will get really bad if those monsters refine them."

This really is strange. What is this mysterious feeling I keep getting from her? Do I really just have some weird fetish?

Fox spirits, snakes, female ghosts, talismans... Am I going to add more weird beings to the list?

The Snow Lady turned around and gave him a look, asking, "Is there something on my face?"

“No.”

“Then why are you looking at me like that?”

“Uh... I just get a familiar feeling from you somehow.”

“You humans always use these flowery words to fool women. Frankly, you should try harder.”

“ ... ”

Zu An really hadn't expected things to turn on him so quickly.

...

Under the Snow Lady's guidance, they quickly arrived at the second peak's location. Sure enough, it was the same spot Zu An had previously suspected. Before he even approached, he heard waves of rumbling coming from the distance, and felt the mountain shaking.

All of that was coming from a rock giant smashing the majestic mountain with its fists. The giant was dozens of meters tall, but compared to the snowy mountain, it still looked small in comparison. Even so, whenever its fist smashed against the mountain, the entire peak rocked back and forth and the snow covering its surface fell away to create huge avalanches. However, even though they would be lethal natural disasters for ordinary cultivators, they didn't do a thing to the giant. Whenever the snow crashed down on its body, a yellow barrier appeared and deflected it off to the side.

Zu An noticed that a crack had already appeared on the mountain. Endless piles of snow and rocks were starting to fall. Even though the crack wasn't that large compared to the entire mountain, if that rock giant continued to batter it with attacks, it could still potentially collapse.

As expected, this wasn't an ordinary mountain! Otherwise, with the rock giant's power, it would have long since been flattened.

“Stop!”

The Snow Lady and the Great Snowy Mountain had a deep connection. She could sense the mountain's pain and could no longer hold herself back. Countless sharp swords formed from ice and snow attacked the rock giant.

Clink clank clink clank!

Sharp noises filled the air. When the icicles approached the rock giant, the yellow radiance around its body shone brightly, revealing its armor made of stone sheets.

The giant suddenly turned around. When it saw the Snow Lady, it laughed in a low and muffled voice, saying, "I was wondering who it was. So it was you! Last time, you ran away on your own, but who would have expected that you would deliver yourself into my hands of your own free will?"

Zu An had a strange expression.

Why do I feel a sense of deja vu from these words?

The rock giant raised its hand. Its thick and strong fist fired out like a missile, traveling extremely quickly. The injured Snow Lady couldn't dodge in time at all, and could only raise her hands in front of her.

Boom!

Wind and snow flew everywhere, and the Snow Lady was blown back. The giant fist continued to go after her, as if it would stop only after she was smashed into pieces.

When he saw that, Zu An quickly flew over to support the Snow Lady. The fist returned to the rock giant's arm. as it exclaimed, "Hm? I was wondering why you had the gall to return. So you called over your lover!"

The Snow Lady was a bit embarrassed to hear that. She quickly pushed Zu An away. At the same time, she found it a bit strange. She had never liked anyone being close to her, but why was it that she didn't feel that much disgust even though this person had already carried her several times?

Zu An felt the leftover chill on his hand. He looked at the rock giant with a displeased expression.

This guy really is annoying.

He waved his hand, sending a streak of sword ki at it. The rock giant's yellow armor lit up again, blocking the enormous blast of ki.

“Nothing more than a tickle!” the rock giant exclaimed, roaring with laughter. Then, its fists smashed into the ground. Dozens of massive rock spikes erupted from the ground beneath Zu An and the Snow Lady!

Fortunately, Zu An reacted quickly and took the Snow Lady away from the area.

“Be careful, it seems to be able to absorb and redirect your attacks,” the Snow Lady said.

Zu An nodded. He also sensed a familiar aura coming from those spikes. The rock giant’s aura seemed to be able to absorb and neutralize his attacks, and use that to increase the power of its retaliation. However, it wasn't the same as the ability used by the Bramble Bone Dragon. The Bramble Bone Dragon had been capable of threefold reflection, while the rock giant absorbed a portion of the attack before transforming it into a counterattack.

At the moment, the giant's ability didn't seem as tricky as the Bramble Bone Dragon's. After all, it would still receive a portion of the damage itself. But comparatively, it didn't need to pay as big of a price as the Bramble Bone Dragon either. Its ability could probably be maintained longer.

“It tickled? Then what about now?” Zu An harrumphed. Golden ripples appeared in the sky, and countless glowing golden weapons appeared from within before flying at the rock giant. He didn't need to hold himself back the way he had against the Bramble Bone Dragon. He could now attack with everything he had.

The rock giant’s body was fairly heavy and clumsy, so it couldn't evade the countless weapons. The armor around it surged with light to stop the attack. Unfortunately, it had still underestimated Zu An's power. At first, its armor blocked all the attacks, but as the endless weapons continued to crash down, the armor began to crack. In the end, it couldn't hold on anymore and completely shattered.

The giant roared madly and brandished its fists at those weapons, but how many volleys of the rain of swords could it block? Its body completely crumbled to pieces, scattering shattered rock across the ground.

“This attack...” the Snow Lady murmured, her eyes wide with fascination.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2069: Shameless

The Snow Lady didn't think she could withstand an attack on that level. And yet, it wasn't the attack's power that shocked her, but rather something else. Her brows furrowed, and a hint of confusion flickered through her eyes. She almost seemed to be recalling something.

Meanwhile, Zu An didn't seem that happy with his result. Instead, he looked at the pile of rocks with a frown.

Suddenly, the rocks began to move. Then, they flew toward each other and combined together. To Zu An and the Snow Lady's shock, the rock giant condensed once more.

When she saw that, the Snow Lady forgot about her earlier confusion and cried out in alarm, "It can regenerate automatically?"

"Regenerate?" Zu An repeated as he reflexively reached for the Immortal Beheading Knives. They just happened to counter strong regenerative abilities. However, when he looked at the giant's massive body and remembered that it was made of rocks, he put them away in the end. The Immortal Beheading Knives only worked when they injured the opponent. This thing's defense was too strong, and it was made of rocks to begin with. The Immortal Beheading Knives wouldn't be able to pierce through.

"I never expected a pervert like you to have this level of skill. I did underestimate you just now," the rock giant said as it struck its chest and glared at the Snow Lady and Zu An.

You have successfully trolled the Iron Fist Rock for +358 +358 +358...

Zu An was a bit surprised. So the rock giant was named the Iron Fist Rock! Its fists really had been pretty heavy, come to think of it.

"But if you two fight against me, the only thing that awaits you is defeat and death!" the Iron Fist Rock roared, then turned at the waist and sent its fist flying at the two of them.

Even though there was over a kilometer between them, Zu An's expression changed. He yelled, "Be careful!"

He could only ignore everything else for now. He held the Snow Lady's hand and teleported several thousand meters to the side.

Boom!

A transparent fist projection smashed down on the location where they had just been. A massive ripple surged in the skies above, as if even space itself had collapsed in that area.

Zu An was shocked, because in that instant, he had actually seen the bright sky become pitch-black. He had even seen specks of starlight in the darkness.

This guy's fist even smashed apart space itself? No wonder it's called the Iron Fist Rock!

Even though Zu An's body was sturdy, if he was hit by this fist that could rip apart even space itself, he would still be seriously injured even if he didn't die.

"You're pretty fast," the Iron Fist Rock said, stunned. It didn't hesitate and punched again.

After seeing what just happened, there was no way Zu An would take that attack directly. He immediately moved to another position.

The Iron Fist Rock struck again, but it was too slow and missed several times in a row. It was so angry it yelled, "You damn rat! If you have the skill, then stop running and fight a proper battle against me!"

You have successfully trolled the Iron Fist Rock for +599 +599 +599...

Zu An's figure suddenly reappeared in midair as he said, "Fine, I won't run anymore. Let's fight a proper battle."

The Snow Lady in the distance immediately panicked, calling out, "You can't fall for his words!" She figured that clashing directly with the rock giant was an extremely unwise choice.

The Iron Fist Rock laughed and said, “Haha, that’s more like it. You have some guts. Take this fist of mine then!” This time, its fist was almost twice as strong as before.

It looked at Zu An expectantly, but it was disappointed to find that the human didn’t keep his promise to remain in place. Instead, he vanished into thin air.

The rock giant was about to scream, but it was suddenly baffled. By the time it reacted, it discovered that it was in midair, while the human was in its previous location. It sensed a terrifying and familiar fist flying toward it, leaving it really confused. Its eyes immediately widened.

Boom!

Even with its armor, it couldn't withstand its own full-powered attack. Its body was blasted into pieces and scattered everywhere.

The Snow Lady sighed in relief. She had already seen Zu An's position-exchanging skill.

Hmph, humans are sly after all.

Zu An kept staring at the remaining rocks on the ground. Sure enough, the rocks began to shake and gather together. In just a few seconds, they gathered together to form a new rock giant.

“You bug, how can you have no sense of trustworthiness at all? You’re despicable and shameless!” the Iron Fist Rock cried, its massive eyes wide. It was so mad that its eyes almost seemed as if they would burst into flame.

You have successfully trolled the Iron Fist Rock for +999 +999 +999...

Although he sensed its anger, Zu An didn’t seem to mind that much. He asked, “Why can’t we kill you? Is there even a point in me fighting against you?”

“I’m immortal to begin with, as long as...” the Iron Fist Rock began, but as it suddenly realized what was going on, it immediately closed its mouth. “You despicable human, you actually tricked me! Thank goodness I’m not like that stupid dragon with a walnut-sized brain, or else I would’ve really fallen for your tricks.”

Zu An was a bit speechless.

Is that Bramble Bone Dragon really at the very bottom of this circle's ladder of disdain? But I don't think the others' intelligence amounts to much either.

As expected, the more someone's lacking in that department, the more they like to compare it.

"What a pity though, I've already obtained the information I needed," Zu An said with a smile.

The Iron Fist Rock exclaimed in horror, "Impossible! How could you know that I..."

However, it snapped out of its daze and said with a sneer, "I almost fell for your tricks again! Enough with the nonsense. Let's settle it with our fists."

It sent its fists flying again, not wanting to give Zu An any chance to trap it through words.

Unfortunately, how could it compete against Zu An's unpredictable movement abilities? It could only watch as he leisurely avoided the attack and said, "There's a story from my hometown that talked about a giant who was really strong, and it even said that his mother was the earth. As long as he was connected to the ground, he would have endless power and could never be defeated. That was why he never lost a fight. However, eventually, there was a strong man who learned of his weakness. When the two fought, he found a chance to lift the giant into the air, preventing him from remaining on the ground. Once he lost the source of his power, that giant became weak, and then was starved to death by that strong man..."

When the story first started, the Iron Fist Rock didn't seem to mind it all that much, but its expression suddenly changed when it heard the ending. With a huge roar, it unleashed more than a dozen punches in succession to make a huge area collapse. Immediately after, it turned tail and ran. Even though it didn't excel at speed, it was still strong, so it became little more than a blur in the distance.

Zu An avoided the collapsing space. He grinned and remarked, "I didn't expect my guess to be spot on."

He took out the Sun Slaying Bow and nocked an arrow. A resplendent comet cut through the air and struck the Iron Fist Rock in the middle of its back. Its body exploded on the spot.

The Snow Lady didn't need Zu An to say anything, and knew exactly what to do. A huge snowstorm rose up from the ground, picking up the scattered rocks and sending them into the air so they couldn't land. However, it wasn't just a simple attack. Every single snowflake was like the sharpest of blades, turning it into an enormous grinder. Soon after, the rocks in the sky were crushed into powder, and then sent all the way into the stratosphere.

As expected, the Iron Fist Rock was unable to regenerate.

The Snow Lady landed by Zu An's side and asked with a hint of curiosity, "Just how did you know that it needed to make contact with the ground to regenerate?"

Zu An laughed and said, "There's no way there could immortal beings in this world. So, its ability definitely had to have a weakness. When we fought earlier, I made sure to smash it to pieces in the air, but it didn't immediately regenerate in the air, only doing so after it landed on the ground again. That was when I developed this hunch.

"Of course, it was just a guess. I was just trying to scare it with a random story and didn't expect it to lose its cool so quickly. That proved my guess was correct."

The Snow Lady was speechless. Only after a while did she ask, "Are humans all as cunning as you?"

"Come on, you're using the wrong word here. This is called being smart, and I don't think there are that many who are as handsome and as smart as me," Zu An replied.

The Snow Lady stared at him for a long time before saying, "You really are shameless."

Zu An was speechless. He coughed lightly and changed the topic, saying, "The last one is their boss. Your injuries are too serious, so I think it's best if I go by myself."

He just had a bad feeling about that radiant being. Just what was its ability?

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2070: Radiant Boss

“We already discussed this topic before, and my answer is still no,” the Snow Lady said, tilting her head slightly to look at him. “Are you humans all as overly sensitive as this?”

Zu An was speechless. He really couldn't say anything else at this point. In the earlier battle, even though the Snow Lady was injured, she hadn't entirely been without any fighting strength left. Later, the Iron Fist Rock had been killed with her help. As such, he didn't try to convince her further, and instead took out both the Skycloud Sword and Ninefoot Mirror. He didn't know which of the two items would be used for the next mountain's seal.

Fortunately, the mountain reacted soon after he took it out. The Ninefoot Mirror in his hands lit up. Then, it was brought away as if by a pair of invisible hands and taken straight to the mountain. A warm light poured out from the Ninefoot Mirror and surrounded the entire peak. Because the mountain had been continuously bombarded by the Iron Fist Rock's attacks, there were already massive cracks and collapsed holes in its surface; but after the light shone on it, the cracks actually sealed at a visible rate. Streak after streak of light appeared between the cracks, and an invisible power repaired them. As the last crack began to close, the Ninefoot Mirror flew toward it and entered the mountain just like the Soul Capturing Jade.

The entire mountain shone with profound runes. Just like the previous mountain, the entire place seemed to carry a holy air. Zu An keenly sensed an invisible fluctuation spread out.

The Snow Lady said, “I've been rather restless recently, but now, I seem to feel much more at ease.”

Zu An gave her a look.

This woman isn't actually the incarnation of the Great Snowy Mountains, is she?

...

After finishing with the two mountains, Zu An didn't tarry. He set out for the third mountain with the Snow Lady. Along the way, he asked tentatively, "Do you still remember when you came to these snowy mountains?"

The Snow Lady shook her head and said, "I only remember that it has been a long, long time, but I don't remember exactly when it was anymore. Actually, for beings like me who have lived extremely long lives, time itself has already lost pretty much all meaning."

Zu An was speechless.

Is this woman showing off? Does she know how many people lose their minds and give up everything for the sake of immortality, yet end up with nothing? And yet these beings that are actually immortal don't think it's anything special.

"Then were you here before the Great Snowy Mountains existed, or did you only come into being after the Great Snowy Mountains were already here? Or did both of you appear at the same time?" Zu An asked, trying to figure out the Snow Lady's origins.

The Snow Lady didn't seem to pick up on that and instinctively replied, "It should be the Great Snowy Mountains that came first, and then me after..."

"Should be?" Zu An repeated, stunned.

"Didn't I already tell you that I can't remember many past events anymore?" The Snow Lady clutched her head as she spoke, as if she was in a bit of pain.

"Then don't think about it anymore," Zu An hurriedly said. When he saw her in pain, he couldn't help but feel a bit of pity.

However, he quickly laughed in self-mockery. He really only cherished people when they were pretty...

...

While they were talking, the two quickly arrived near the third mountain. Both of them narrowed their eyes, as it was just too blindingly bright. Their first thought was that a second sun had appeared in the sky, but then, they realized that there was a glowing being at the top of the snowy mountain. The

light it released was even more dazzling than a real sun. After all, the position of the Great Snowy Mountains was special, so the sun wasn't as bright here.

"The fact that the two of you are here means those fools have already been killed," the glowing sphere said.

Zu An took the Snow Lady behind a hill and said, "Your distinguished self doesn't seem to be surprised."

Previously, that Bramble Bone Dragon mentioned that as long as you were seen by this radiant being, something would happen.

Even though he didn't know what would happen, it was definitely not a good thing. As such, he remained on guard so he wouldn't be taken advantage of.

"Why would I be surprised? Even though those guys had some skill, they were quite lacking in the intellect department. Even though they all said that the bone dragon's brain was the size of a walnut, I don't think the other two's were that much bigger," the radiant being said. Its voice was extremely indifferent, as if the ones who died weren't even its companions. When it saw Zu An hide behind the hill and not talk to it face to face, the radiant being's voice seemed to convey a hint of interest as it continued, "It seems like you obtained a bit of information from them."

"You don't even care about their deaths, so why would they remain loyal to you? Of course they told me all of your secrets." Zu An said deliberately to try to provoke it.

"I doubt that." The radiant being chuckled. "Setting aside the restriction I set in their bodies, even if you had some way of obtaining any intelligence from them, you should have pretended you didn't know anything instead of speaking like this... Hmm, let me think for a moment... You likely know a bit, but not everything, so you're deliberately trying to feel out the situation. You're trying to figure out some things from what I say, right?"

Zu An sighed, saying, "As expected, you're a bit smarter than those other guys."

"Even though those guys were stupid, they were still pretty strong. Not even that Snow Lady should have been able to kill them. The only one who has such ability in this weak world..." The radiant being paused for a moment.

“You're the one who killed the War Priest, Demonic Motherbug, and Manipulator of Death, right?”

Zu An was a bit surprised. He said, “Now even I have a bit of respect for you. You actually pieced together so much from just a bit of information.”

“You are indeed a talent, and I admire talents,” the radiant being said. It thought for a bit and offered, “How about this? I'll give you a chance. If you come to my side, I can spare you your life and also the lives of your friends and family. You can also conquer worlds much more vast than this one with the rest of us. I just happen to be lacking a smart subordinate like you.”

“I was just praising you for being smart, and yet now you're suddenly showing me how dumb you are. I've already refused all the previous offers, so why try the same thing again without much sincerity?” Zu An sneered. “You're clearly at a disadvantage right now, and I've already reinforced the other two seals. As long as I deal with this one, I'll be able to completely seal all of you demons. I really don't know where you get your confidence from, thinking you can actually make me bow down to you.”

The radiant being chuckled. “It seems the one who doesn't fully understand the current situation is you. Previously, because of the world barrier, we decided to hide ourselves for a decade or two to slowly infiltrate your world's powers and attack by coordinating attacks inside and outside. However, we never expected your world to have a Fiend race prince with such vigorous ambitions, someone who would actually take the initiative to collaborate with us, helping us loosen the seal and letting us invade this world. From that point on, all of you were doomed to lose.”

Zu An frowned.

This guy really knows how to act like a pretentious prick.

The radiant being continued, “Do you know why I didn't decide to help those idiots even though I could sense the changes that were happening to the sealing nails?”

“Why?” This time, it was the Snow Lady who spoke.

“That's because, as long as I could occupy this sealing nail, the two of you would come sooner or later. After I dealt with you two, I could refine the other two sealing nails, so wouldn't it all be the same then? Meanwhile, if I left and

you two just happened to rush here, wouldn't I have been lured away like a fool?" the radiant being said matter-of-factly

Zu An was speechless. He replied, "Isn't your distinguished self a bit too overconfident?"

The radiant being sighed, saying, "After conquering countless worlds and coming to such a low level world, it's very difficult not to be confident."

"The mountain can't take much more," the Snow Lady muttered with a frown. She could clearly sense the mountain's groans. She couldn't hold herself back anymore. With a wave of her sleeves, a wild snowstorm swept forth from the bottom of the mountain up to the summit.

Suddenly, a streak of light appeared on the mountaintop. The roaring and surging blizzard seemed to become completely still.

The radiant being said, "I have experienced a myriad of worlds and encountered snow women in some worlds. However, you are different from them. You seem like a human, and yet you aren't. You also resemble a monster, and yet you aren't. Just what kind of a being are you, really?"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2071: Annihilation

Chapter 2071: Annihilation

When he heard what the radiant being said, Zu An was also a bit curious. Even this mysterious monster leader couldn't analyze the Snow Lady's background... This woman really did seem unfathomable.

However, the Snow Lady wasn't interested in replying to the radiant being's question. She retorted, "Either way, I'm not a disgusting creature like you."

While speaking, she already seemed to have resonated with the nearby mountains. In just an instant, avalanches crashed down from all of the snowy peaks. Endless waves of snow surged relentlessly before finally gathering together to form a snow dragon that roared and charged at the radiant being.

Such tremendous natural power really made Zu An sigh at the insignificance of human beings. At the same time, he began to admire the Snow Lady quite a bit. After all, she was seriously injured, but she was still able to release such a powerful attack.

The radiant being only slowly raised its hand toward the ferocious and overbearing massive dragon of snow, saying, "And the Lord said, let there be light."

As soon as it spoke, a tremendous amount of dazzling light engulfed the world. The huge dragon of ice and snow was enveloped within, releasing a painful scream as its entire body began to shake intensely. Its body began to melt at a visible rate. Soon after, it disappeared completely, snowflakes blowing away in the wind.

When she saw that, the Snow Lady was completely stunned. She hadn't expected that the ultimate move she had been preparing this time would be defeated so easily.

Zu An was also a bit stunned. He could see a humanoid outline in the center of the blinding light, a figure who appeared to be coldly overlooking everything below. He was really alarmed now.

There's no way this guy really is some god, right?

Even so, he quickly gave up on the thought, because it was definitely a monster who wanted to invade this world. How could it possibly be some sacred and holy god?

The radiant being looked at the two of them and said, "You two should now be convinced, right? There's no way you could be a match for me. Surrendering as soon as possible is your best option."

Zu An chuckled and retorted, "If you're really that strong, then why even bother talking so much to us? Isn't it all to erode our fighting spirit and scare us into surrendering?"

When she heard what he said, the Snow Lady was surprised. She looked at Zu An and said, "I didn't expect the monsters to be as crafty as you."

Zu An was speechless.

Is this woman praising me or mocking me?

The radiant being stopped speaking for a moment. It didn't seem to have anticipated that Zu An would speak that way. A while later, it said, "I admire your confidence. But in that case, why are you hiding behind that hill? Do you not even have the courage to fight me face to face bravely?"

"There's really no need for you to taunt me. I don't need to face you to attack you," Zu An said with a chuckle. He reached out his hand, and golden ripples appeared in the air. Their brilliance wasn't inferior in any way to the radiant being's light.

The radiant being voiced its surprise. "A summoner? An interesting skill indeed."

One after another, golden weapons appeared from the ripples. Then, they flew at the radiant being. Zu An was really glad that he had the Rune Weapon Chart, letting him attack from a distance without having to face his opponent directly. The weapons attacked the radiant being from all sorts of different angles. Zu An didn't just use them as brute force artillery; instead, he made several weapons use sword techniques at the same time to coordinate with each other.

The sword skill Zu An was best at was none other than the Snowflake Sword. When she saw it, the Snow Lady cried out in surprise. She then began to think a bit to herself.

Zu An didn't pay her reaction any mind. All of his attention was taken up by controlling the various weapons to attack the radiant being. However, when the weapons entered the radiant being's vicinity, they all slowed down and were no longer as responsive as before. It was hard for Zu An to even control them.

The radiant being didn't treat the attacks with any importance. Its voice was full of contempt and ridicule as it said, "Not a bad skill. Unfortunately, the sword skills are only flowery and lack substance. The weapons are each fighting on their own and lack cooperation. It seems this low-level world has never even seen things like sword formations."

Zu An was stunned. In the past, not many had been able to stop the endless rain of swords as soon as he used this move. Winning with brute strength naturally didn't require any technique; but now that he was facing a stronger

enemy, there was clearly no way he could win with just sheer force, and he could only try to win through technique. And yet, he hadn't expected that this sword technique, which he had done his best to bring out, would be so full of holes in the enemy's eyes.

Indeed, the Snowflake Sword was designed to be used by an individual. When so many weapons were using it together, they could at most increase the technique's power additively. Now that the enemy had mentioned a sword formation, Zu An was stirred.

It seems there are definitely some powerful sword formations in this world.

"A sword formation, you say? I have those too." Zu An harrumphed. He controlled the golden weapons and flew into the air. The sword tips pointed straight down, then poured down in the form of the Blue Luan Sword Formation skill. Countless weapons interwove in the air, faster than the eye could see. In that instant, the entire space turned into a forbidden zone.

"Oh? This level of comprehension is quite high. That's a bit more interesting," the radiant being said, no longer as indifferent as before. Instead, its body fired out a blinding barrier of light that shone upon everything within hundreds of meters.

Zu An's eyes narrowed. His sword formation had completely stopped!

No, actually, they hadn't stopped. He could sense that his own weapons were flying toward their target with extreme speed. But to the naked eye, they appeared to be frozen in midair and not moving at all. With those two contradicting experiences appearing at the same time, even Zu An's expression turned blank.

However, he had experienced all kinds of things, and together with his knowledge as a transmigrator, he quickly figured out the key issue. The reason for the seeming contradiction was because of the light's interference. It formed a special space in the surroundings that made all physical laws become chaotic and ineffective. It seemed like just a kilometer or so of distance, but in reality, there were countless layers of space stacked on top of each other, creating endless distance in between. It was like a spacecraft traveling through the cosmos - to people on Earth, it would appear extremely fast, but amid the boundless void of space it would look as if it wasn't moving at all.

"This makes things much trickier," Zu An muttered; he was getting a bit of a headache. Previously, the Bramble Bone Dragon and Iron Fist Rock had used powerful reflective or defensive skills. They were hard to deal with too, but at least he could hit them and kill them just by whittling them down. But this radiant being had countless spatial layers protecting him. It was impossible to hit him!

Fortunately, he had been able to learn about this skill through the sword formation. Otherwise, their battle could have reached a critical point before he found out, leading him to think that he was far closer to the enemy than he truly was. The consequences of that would have been severe.

Just then, the radiant being looked in Zu An's direction and said, "You still came out in the end."

Zu An was really alarmed. For the sake of seeing what was happening, he had unwittingly revealed the upper half of his body. He was now within the radiant being's line of sight. He reflexively tried to dodge, but he was horrified to discover that he couldn't move his body. It was as if he had a freezing spell cast on him. He finally understood what that Bramble Bone Dragon had been talking about now. As long as you were seen by the radiant being, you wouldn't be able to move at all anymore and could only wait for it to finish you off.

"What a pity it is that you didn't accept my recruitment offer. In that case, I can only help you... die." The radiant being's voice was cold, as if it was a judge that ruled over all things. It pointed in Zu An's direction, and a blinding pillar of light fell upon him.

As he sensed the annihilation intent behind the light, goosebumps covered Zu An's body. Even though his body had been refined endless times and was now incredibly tough, there was no way it would end well for him if he was hit by the pillar. Unfortunately, he was already within the opponent's sight, so he couldn't use any of his skills anymore.

Suddenly, a snowstorm surged beneath Zu An's feet and swept around him, allowing him to barely avoid the destructive light. He was delivered to the neighboring peak. The snowstorm disappeared and turned into the Snow Lady. Both of them looked at the place they had just been. There was a several-meter-wide hole blown through it, with extremely sharp edges. There was no bottom visible, and it was impossible to tell how far it reached. There

had been no sound when the light struck, either; it was as if all physical matter had been directly erased.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2072: Sure Hit Skill

Their expressions changed slightly. If they had been hit by that pillar of light, even if they didn't die, they would only have barely survived, right?

"Oh? You actually avoided it? That move was quite interesting," the radiant being said, continuing to look in their direction.

Just then, Zu An had been brought away by the Snow Lady and escaped the enemy's line of sight. He subsequently recovered the ability to move. After seeing the radiant being's attack, there was no way he would give the enemy another chance. He grabbed the Snow Lady and flew elsewhere.

"You actually managed to move faster than me. Hm, it seems to be an instant movement skill," the radiant being said, sounding a bit surprised. "I didn't expect this low-level world would have such an ability. It really doesn't make much sense."

Zu An didn't respond to it, and thought about how to win instead. Not even such a powerful sword formation had been able to injure it. Spacetime around the radiant being seemed to be abnormal. He wasn't confident he would be able to injure it even if he used some more of his trump cards.

The radiant being looked in their direction again, but this time, the Snow Lady tacitly moved in a different direction from Zu An. That way, there was no way the enemy could attend to both problems at the same time.

Zu An had his instantaneous movement skill, while the Snow Lady could turn herself into wind and snow, and that was what this place lacked the least. Comparatively, it was actually Zu An who would be a bit easier to catch. Sure enough, the radiant being didn't chase after the Snow Lady, and stared straight at Zu An instead.

Fortunately, Zu An already had complete mastery over his Grandgale ability, with Mo Xi's skill occasionally reducing the cooldown of its next use. Besides,

with his current cultivation, he was extremely fast to begin with, so he could just about deal with the attacks.

As time went on, Zu An felt less pressure and sighed in relief. Even though the enemy's attack was powerful, as long as he was prepared, he would be fine as long as the enemy didn't look straight at him. Thus, he found an opening to teleport right next to the radiant being, and attacked with the Tai'e Sword's Domain of Power.

The radiant being's figure trembled slightly, clearly affected by the domain. However, when Zu An's sword was three inches from the enemy, it stopped cold.

By then, the radiant being reacted and turned around, but Zu An had already anticipated that. He immediately moved several kilometers away. He naturally knew that the sword likely couldn't hurt the enemy, and had just wanted to test the waters from up close. It was as he'd expected. Even though it looked as if there was only three inches between them, in reality, when he slashed with his sword, he had felt as if the target was infinitely far away.

"This sword of yours seems to be a bit special. It's not a bad weapon, even across the universe's various realms," the radiant being said, looking at the Tai'e Sword in Zu An's hands. Its voice carried a bit of admiration, as this was clearly outside of its expectations.

"Not bad, huh..." Zu An muttered, noticing the wording it used. In this world, the Tai'e Sword was already a deity-grade weapon. It seemed the many realms of the universe really were vast.

"There's no way for you to defeat me. I advise you to surrender earlier and cease this meaningless struggle," the radiant being said.

"You don't have a way to catch me either, right? You make it sound as if everything is under your control," Zu An said disdainfully while avoiding its line of sight.

"I merely let you run around to see your abilities. Do you really think I have no way of dealing with you?" the radiant being asked, looking at Zu An again.

Zu An was about to move when he heard the enemy say, "This attack will inevitably land."

Zu An was stunned. He discovered that even though he used his instant movement skill, the radiant being's eyes still landed on his body. He was instantly frozen in place and unable to move, leaving him speechless.

What kind of a skill is this? Soulspeak? If whatever it says happens, what the hell is the point of even fighting anymore?

He had a similar skill in Keyboard Come. However, he had to pay a heavy price to use the skill, while his opponent seemed to be able to use it at will!

"Do you now know regret? It's a pity that it's too late for you." The radiant being sneered, as if it really liked seeing its enemies' expression in these situations.

In order to guard against the Snow Lady's rescue attempts, it waved its hand and cast endless light all around Zu An's location. If the Snow Lady dared to come close, she would only die with Zu An. Sure enough, a burst of wind and snow nearby scattered and exposed the Snow Lady's real body. She was really anxious, but she couldn't break through the layer of light. She couldn't save him at all.

The radiant being didn't pay her any attention. In its eyes, even though the Snow Lady's strength wasn't bad, everything was already in its grasp. She wasn't as much of a threat as Zu An. As such, it didn't hesitate and immediately attacked Zu An with killing intent.

The Snow Lady sensed the light of annihilation fire at Zu An. She had witnessed the power of the light earlier, so she couldn't help but feel a bit of despair. It seemed as if Zu An was now finished. Suddenly, however, her vision blurred and she lost sight of Zu An. Afterward, the radiant being was left standing where Zu An had just been.

The radiant being was also a bit stunned, clearly not expecting this predicament. Before it could even react, the destructive light had already smashed into its body. A dazzling ball of blinding radiance erupted. The Snow Lady couldn't help but close her eyes. Only after quite a bit of time did the light dim a bit. She quickly looked at the scene of the battle.

The radiant being was still standing there, not destroyed by the destructive light. Of course, it wasn't completely unaffected. The light around itself had clearly become much dimmer, and they could now clearly see a black humanoid figure within. But apart from its eyes, no other features could be

seen on its face. Its outline looked like a rippling black flame. It seemed more like some kind of energy being than a human.

“An exchange skill? Not even I could stop it. This is a top-tier divine skill even among the various realms. I never expected to have discovered such a thing here in this world.” Even though the radiant being was injured, it now sounded even more excited.

As he stood in the distance, Zu An frowned. He had actually expected the earlier attack, so he'd been baiting the enemy to use its most powerful attack, and hadn't even hesitated to put himself at risk to do so. He hadn't expected the enemy's own strike to not be effective.

“I'm really reluctant to kill you now. I have to imprison your soul and slowly interrogate you for these skills of yours,” the radiant being said excitedly. It hadn't expected to receive something so great from this world.

“It's still hard to say who will kill whom.” Zu An harrumphed. He moved continuously around the radiant being's surroundings like a bolt of lightning. He continued to test it out, trying to find its weakness.

No matter what a skill was, there had to be a way to defeat it. He refused to believe that this radiant being was completely without weaknesses. The laws of the universe wouldn't permit such a ridiculous being. The most important thing now was how to find these weaknesses.

As it watched Zu An dart around it, the radiant being said with a hint of mockery, “It's useless. Facing me, all of this evasion is futile. This trick of yours will inevitably...”

Midway through its sentence, it heard Zu An say, “What you lookin' at?!”

“I'm lookin' at you, shithead!”

The radiant being was stunned as soon as it said that. It had never expected such a thing. That didn't seem like something it wanted to say!

However, it was experienced and knowledgeable, quickly exclaiming in shock, “You actually know soulspeak techniques?”

This human had brought it too many pleasant surprises. Even though he wasn't weak in this world, his strength didn't amount to much in the boundless

cosmos, and the radiant being had seen too many beings who were stronger than him. If not for this world barrier's hindrance, it could easily have picked out some of its own subordinates who were stronger. Even so, this guy's skills were each more dazzling than the next. Even the radiant being was starting to feel a bit of desire.

When he saw that his skill had worked, Zu An finally felt at ease.

The products of the keyboard system are reliable as usual.

He had always thought that 'what you lookin' at' was always kind of silly, but now, it seemed to be the very bane of soulspeak. As long as the enemy spoke, it would always be interrupted by 'what you lookin' at'. Then, they naturally wouldn't be able to use their soulspeak ability anymore!

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2073: Time Severing

The radiant being didn't get angry; instead, it said happily, "It seems this world was about what I expected after all, hahaha..."

Even though this world appeared to be really weak, it was full of all sorts of mysteries. Ignoring everything else, even if another weaker world had a world barrier, how could it have possibly stalled their invasion for so long? And now, the miraculous skills displayed by this human further proved certain things.

Zu An was a bit confused.

Is this guy crazy or something?

He couldn't be bothered to think about that, though. He was worried that the other side was playing tricks on him, so he continued to use 'what you lookin at' to interrupt the enemy's skills.

The Snow Lady found this scene rather comical to watch. These were clearly the two most powerful beings in this world, and yet they looked like little children play-fighting against each other.

Hm? Why do I know how human children play?

The Snow Lady was stunned. She suddenly clutched her forehead. She felt as if some new memory fragments had appeared in her head. Zu An noticed how she was behaving, but he didn't have the freedom to take care of her. He could only focus on finding an opportunity to attack.

Sure enough, after continuously replying 'I'm looking at you, shithead' again and again, the radiant being couldn't help but be driven a bit crazy as well. "Damn youngster... I'm looking at you, shithead! ...Can you stop... I'm looking at you, shithead!... F*ck..."

You have successfully trolled the Shadow Monster King for +499 +499 +499...

Zu An thought to himself, *So that was your name! That's strange though. You clearly have light all around you, so why is there 'shadow' in your name? Could it be related to the dark black color of your body?*

Even so, he quickly found a chance to attack. A red bow suddenly appeared in his hand. This being's light was a bit similar to the sun, so the Sun Slaying Bow could be effective.

The Star Shattering Imprint activated, increasing Zu An's power tenfold! He drew an arrow. Profound runes flickered all over the Sun Slaying Bow, and they converged onto that arrow. In the next instant, it flew toward the Shadow Monster King's body.

Unlike the previous attacks, the arrow created a layer of watery ripples. It was as if the layers of space were experiencing intense pressure and chaos. The arrow wasn't suspended in the air, but rather continued to approach the Shadow Monster King. Even though it had clearly slowed down considerably and wasn't much faster than an ant, it still persistently closed in on the monster's body.

The Shadow Monster King stared at the arrow in front of it, as if it was using some kind of ability to defend itself. In the end, the arrow finally arrived in front of it. Even so, a second later, it crumbled away into ashes, as if it had been completely corroded.

In the past, the Fiend races had held the Sun Slaying Bow, but no Sun Slaying Arrows. Even though arrows could be condensed out of ki, the late Fiend Emperor hadn't been satisfied with just that. He had scoured the world for treasures, then gathered all of the skilled crafters of the Fiend races to

refine some arrows. Even though those arrows couldn't compare to the legendary true Sun Slaying Arrows, they were still the best this world could produce and weren't inferior to immortal-grade weapons. On top of that, with the additional support of the Sun Slaying Bow, their power already far exceeded that of ordinary immortal-grade weapons. However, even an arrow that sharp had shattered, and turned into scattered ashes no less.

The Shadow Monster King laughed at Zu An, saying, "I already told you it was impossible for your attacks to hurt me, and yet you insist on doing such futile things."

At the same time, it was pretty shocked.

Why is the bow in his hands like that legendary bow? But why would that bow possibly appear in this world? Also, its power isn't right either, so I'm probably just overthinking things.

Even so, Zu An's expression remained calm as he said, "I have a rough idea now. What flows around you isn't layers of space; rather, you control the flow of time. That's why you are able to create this kind of effect."

He couldn't help but feel a bit frustrated now. It was hard to say whether space or time was harder to deal with. Regardless of which one it was, though, this guy already far exceeded the level he could currently deal with. He knew fully well that it would be better to retreat while he still had a chance. Nothing good would come out of fighting further.

The prediction of guaranteed death from the divination he'd carried out before entering the sealed land appeared in his mind. At first, even though the others enemies were dangerous, they'd never really threatened his life. He'd thus felt as if that divination was just meant to scare him. But now, it seemed the prediction wasn't directed at the other enemies, but rather this guy.

Even so, he only hesitated for a moment before he calmed down again. Right now, he had the safety of an entire world on his shoulders. Whether it was the humans or the fiends, he had to protect them. If he feared death and backed down at a time like this, allowing the monsters to fully open the seal, more monsters would invade this world. Furthermore, if the world barrier shattered, the most powerful monsters would no longer be hindered. There would be even less of a chance of him winning then.

This was his only opportunity. Even though the difference between them was enough to cause despair, it was definitely the moment when their strength disparity was the smallest it would ever be. He had to stop this enemy here and seal the monsters away, even if he had to give up his life to do so.

In the past, when he'd watched heroes sacrifice their lives, even though he was moved, he'd never wanted to become a hero himself. His ideal lifestyle was that of an indolent ruler with three thousand members in the imperial harem. It would be even better if he didn't have to deal with any of the court's matters.

And yet, he'd never expected that when the moment truly arrived, he didn't feel there was much to fear about a sacrifice either. It was just that natural. Even if it wasn't for the people he didn't know, he still had to protect those at his side...

When he thought through all of that, Zu An only became calmer. At the same time, he mocked himself, thinking that he really couldn't do random divinations in the future, or else it would really affect his mentality and judgment. Then, he would be imperceptibly pushed toward the predicted outcome.

His expression grew serious. He drew the Sun Slaying Bow again, but he didn't use the imitation Sun Slaying Arrow the Fiend Emperor had made, but rather the real, white-ribbed arrow he had obtained from the secret dungeon!

He was worried that the radiant being wouldn't give him another chance to attack, so he immediately used Keyboard Come's ability, calling out, "This arrow will shatter all skills!"

The power of the Sun Slaying Arrow was extremely great. It was even capable of shooting down suns. However, the enemy could control space or time around itself, so Zu An wasn't sure if the arrow could hit it. That was why he immediately applied Keyboard Come's effect to the arrow. He didn't know just what kind of price he would have to pay to negate the temporal laws around the enemy's body, but he didn't have a choice left now. He couldn't gamble on this arrow failing. If this arrow was defeated, the entire world could be finished.

As soon as he said that, a solemn and divine air suddenly filled the world.

The Shadow Monster King's expression changed greatly. Its entire body erupted with brilliance, and endless radiance covered the entire region, surrounding everything within a thousand miles.

Zu An's pupils contracted rapidly. He discovered that his arrow had been about to fly forth, and yet it stopped a mere instant before it could! He'd been about to release it, and yet everything had stopped.

It was different from the experience of freezing from being looked at. Right now, the enemy hadn't even looked at him. Instead, it was as if a sun had engulfed the surrounding space, filling it with light. It was everywhere, impossible to resist and impossible to defend against. Regardless of how he moved, or even if he used the exchange skill, it was all meaningless, because all the space around him was surrounded by light.

He even noticed the Snow Lady's appalled and heartbroken expression. She was also frozen. He could see a snowstorm that had been starting to move beneath her dress, noticing that she had been about to change into snow to evade, but she was frozen in that instant. He could see every intricate and beautiful snowflake clearly. Everything was clearly moving, and yet it was also frozen in place.

The blast waves of the battle had caused avalanches to descend from the nearby snowy peaks. The collapsing snow, however, had stopped halfway up the mountain. Nearby birds had been flapping their wings frantically in an attempt to leave this dangerous place, but they were trapped in their struggle while their bodies were frozen in midair.

...

The entire world seemed to have had the pause button pressed on it. Such a feeling was strange and terrifying!

Only one being could still move - the Shadow Monster King. It slowly walked toward Zu An as it said, "Even though I didn't believe you had the ability to kill me, in that instant, I sensed the threat of death. I had no choice but to pay a great price to use Time Severing. You can now feel proud of yourself even in death."

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2074: You Finally Came to Find Me

Chapter 2074: You Finally Came to Find Me

Zu An cracked a grin and said, "I'm so sorry, but I only give my body and soul to my lovers, not you."

The Shadow Monster King sneered. "That isn't up to you..."

Suddenly, its eyes widened, because it realized something. Why was this guy able to speak? It realized that the situation was unfavorable for itself and immediately withdrew thousands of meters, but unfortunately, it was already too late. The Sun Slaying Arrow that had already been fully charged up and waiting to be fired left the bowstring!

The arrow already defied the very concept of speed. The instant it was released, it hit the Shadow Monster King. Only then did it see a comet cut across the sky.

Boom!

A blinding sphere of light exploded outward, looking like the explosion of a star amid the void of space! However, it only persisted for a second; the next second, a black hole appeared, sucking all of the light away.

Meanwhile, the Shadow Monster King had already completely scattered. There wasn't even a trace of it left.

The Snow Lady had already recovered her ability to move. She flew over to Zu An's side and supported his staggering body, asking, "How do you feel right now?"

Zu An chuckled, saying, "I didn't expect you to be the caring sort." However, there were fine cracks covering his entire body, and his smile only worsened his injuries and made some blood trickle out.

"Do you know what kind of condition you're in right now? And yet you're still making jokes!" the Snow Lady exclaimed, her usual cold demeanor giving way to worry.

Zu An was stunned. He looked at the sparkling radiance in her eyes and the frozen beads that slid down her stunning face, which made her look even more gorgeous.

She's crying? And for my sake, no less? Were we really that close?

No matter how much of a narcissist Zu An was, he couldn't really believe he had that much charm. How could they possibly have started another interspecies romance in such a short amount of time?

Even so, she was crying right now, and for some reason, he felt really awful when he saw her cry, as if he had forgotten the most important thing in his life. He quickly consoled her, saying, "Don't worry. Even though my injuries are serious, I won't die."

With his current strength, if he had immediately used Keyboard Come to say 'this arrow will shatter all skills', perhaps there wouldn't even have been ashes left. Fortunately, after he received Mi Li's guidance, he'd realized that he could use the Heaven Devouring Sutra to form a black hole, distorting space and light. The enemy's Time Severing ability would thus be weakened to some degree, lessening the power needed for Keyboard Come to successfully activate. Of course, he had only used that skill in a hasty last-ditch effort, so he naturally couldn't completely destroy the Shadow Monster King's divine skill. It had had a special defense in front of its body as well, which was why he still had to rely on Keyboard Come for the rest in the end.

All of that naturally came with a price, which was why he was seriously injured. He was bleeding from his entire body, and all of the meridians in his body were a mess. Thankfully, his life was still intact. With his body's ridiculous regenerative prowess, he would be able to recover after resting for around a year.

When she heard him say that, the Snow Lady pulled him into her arms emotionally. Her body trembled a bit. Sometimes, she was crying, but other times, she was smiling.

Zu An was stunned.

What is going on here?

As the Snow Lady hugged him with her icy body, Zu An could suddenly feel everything. He had no idea where to place his hands. He was really puzzled. Just what is going on right now?

There's absolutely no way she would become like this from just a brief interaction. There has to be something else going on that I just don't know about right now.

He was about to ask her about it when a sneer suddenly came from the distance, and a voice said, "Look at the two of you. Such an adulterous couple, head over heels in love. But unfortunately, the two of you are celebrating a bit too early, no?"

Zu An and the Snow Lady were both shocked. They quickly followed the source of the sound and saw a small shadow. Then, that shadow began to move; it slowly grew larger until it finally took the form of the Shadow Monster King. Just then, both Zu An and the Snow Lady were full of questions.

"???"

This guy didn't even die from that? Is it a damn cockroach that can't be killed?

The Shadow Monster King also grimaced as it looked at Zu An, saying, "I really underestimated you. I didn't expect you to really have the ability to kill me, and even put me in such a miserable state!"

You have successfully trolled the Shadow Monster King for +999 +999 +999...

"There's no way you could've survived that arrow. Just what is going on?" Zu An asked gravely. In the past, the legendary archer Houyi had even been able to shoot down suns with these arrows, and he had tested them out in the secret dungeon before. There was definitely nothing wrong with the power of that arrow, so there was no chance for this Shadow Monster King to have blocked it.

"That's right. In a sense, you did in fact kill me," the Shadow Monster King said, its eyes filled with seething rage. "But I've always been meticulous in my actions, so I concealed a shadow clone. I borrowed that clone to revive."

Zu An was speechless.

Even after all of this, the enemy had a substitute...

“You must be feeling despair now, right? If you hadn’t continued to woo each other and immediately found me instead, I would have been at my weakest and couldn’t defend against you at all. But now, I’ve already fully revived. What awaits the two of you is only death,” the Shadow Monster King said with a malicious laugh.

The Snow Lady was a bit annoyed. It was all her fault for being too emotional, or else she wouldn’t have made such a mistake. She hadn’t even been able to win against the monster when she was at her strongest. Now, she was injured and Zu An was in terrible condition, so there was no way they would be its match.

Zu An remained calm as he said, “Drop the act already. There’s definitely no way you can make unlimited clones of yourself. If the strength of each clone were truly on par with your own, wouldn’t that make you invincible? You’re probably still quite weak, using these words to provoke us and keep us immersed in emotions of regret and frustration. That way, it would be easier for us to make mistakes.”

The Shadow Monster King was stunned. It said, “I never expected the thoughts of a human like you to be so cunning. That’s right, I no longer have the strength I had at my peak, but both of you are seriously injured. My current strength is more than enough to deal with the two of you.”

It raised a finger while speaking. Then, a laser fired out from its finger.

Zu An reacted quickly. He immediately tried to dodge, but his current condition was too horrible and he couldn’t keep up with his thoughts at all.

“Be careful!” the Snow Lady exclaimed as she brought him away and evaded to the side. She nervously looked at Zu An and asked, “Are you hurt?”

Zu An shook his head. Then, his eyes landed on her shoulder as he said, “But you were.”

A fine hole had suddenly appeared in the Snow Lady’s shoulder. It was clear that after saving him, she’d been unable to dodge in time and was hit by the Shadow Monster King.

"I'm fine," the Snow Lady said with a weak smile. Snowflakes fluttered around her wounds, and the injury quickly recovered.

"Why do you... care so much for me?" Zu An asked.

That was what he couldn't understand at all. At first, the Snow Lady had definitely been an ice queen in every way. She hadn't even wanted him to touch her when he saved her earlier, and yet now, it was as if she was a completely different person. She was no longer the ice-cold Snow Lady, but more like one of his lovers he shared deep affection with. Even so, he wasn't some naive and innocent boy who couldn't tell if someone was really his own lover or not.

The Snow Lady looked at him with her clear and cold eyes. She didn't answer; instead, she said to herself, "You finally came to find me."

Zu An was speechless.

The Shadow Demon King was about to explode from anger, exclaiming, "You damn adulterers, shouldn't you treat a villain like me with a little more respect?"

Zu An frowned, saying, "Something's not right. You shouldn't be so chatty. From when you tried to make me surrender until now, you've spoken far too much. I refuse to believe that someone of your cultivation rank would make that kind of mistake. Just what are you stalling for?"

There had been several times when the enemy could have attacked, and yet it had deliberately rambled on and on. Zu An had felt that something was off for a while.

The Shadow Monster King chuckled. "Did you only realize it now? Should I praise you for not being a complete idiot, or mock you for still being too stupid?"

"There was one part that you got wrong with your guesses. The reason I continuously advised for your surrender wasn't because I was scared that I couldn't win against you. Rather, I was stalling for a bit of time because I was worried that you would ruin my plans. But now, I don't need to worry about that anymore, because my plans are already complete."

The third mountain peak suddenly began to rumble. Then, the entire thing suddenly rose, revealing a massive silhouette it had been resting on all this time.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2075: Caution Even In the Face of Certain Victory

The entire mountain was like a prison that seemed to have been holding down a black figure, one that was incredibly massive. It looked just like the dinosaurs from the movies of Zu An's previous world.

Zu An didn't have the time to admire the sight. He quickly took out the remaining divine artifact, the Skycloud Sword, to try and reseal the snowy mountain. Unfortunately, there was no reaction from it at all even after he took it out. It didn't resonate with the mountain the way the other two divine artifacts had at all. In that instant, he didn't know how to reseal the mountain anymore either and quickly asked the Snow Lady, "You share a special connection with the mountain, so do you know how we can reseal it again?"

The Snow Lady shook her head and said, "I didn't even know that in the past, these mountains were seals."

Zu An was speechless.

Just then, a deafening roar erupted from the black figure, one that seemed to make the entire mountain range tremble. Some powerful snow beasts in the distance fell to the ground, their bodies shaking all over.

Zu An could clearly sense a trembling sensation that came from his very soul. However, he was already someone with exceptional willpower and quickly overcame that out-of-sorts feeling.

Only then did he have a chance to carefully size up the black figure. When he saw it clearly again, he couldn't help but become stunned. Why did this thing look a bit like a t-rex, but also like an alien queen from a certain movie? It had a grotesquely-shaped head and a mouth full of giant, sharp teeth. It stood on two thick and strong legs. Even though its arms were much thinner in comparison, every claw it had was a viciously sharp weapon. As it swayed

back and forth willfully, its thick tail resembled a third leg. There was an aura of destruction around it, as if it was ready to attack at any time.

There was a bit of restraining fear in the Shadow Monster King's eyes as it floated closer to the creature, saying, "Revered Lord of Slaughter, I can set you free. In accordance with our past agreement, we should set up a soul contract."

Zu An was startled.

No wonder this guy is full of murderous energy and looks like a weapon of mass destruction. The name is pretty fitting.

He didn't dare to treat this thing as an ordinary beast. He could feel the powerful pressure coming from its body even from far away. Furthermore, the cruelty and shrewdness visible in its eyes showed that it was definitely a being with extremely high intelligence. Judging from how respectful the Shadow Monster King was acting, the Lord of Slaughter's status and strength were definitely not inferior to its own.

The Lord of Slaughter nodded. It spoke in a monotonous and dull voice that was extremely harsh on the ears. The nearby mountain even trembled a bit from the sound.

The Shadow Monster King sighed in relief, a trace of joy in its eyes. The reason why it had come all the way here was that it had been retracing certain clans' legends. In ancient times, the Lord of Slaughter had been an extremely famous and powerful being. At first, rather than fulfilling the agreement, the Shadow Monster King had planned to turn the sealed creature into its own pet. Then, with its own power, as well as the Lord of Slaughter's strength, it would command a certain level of status even among some extremely powerful worlds.

At first, it had been fully confident in its plans. After all, its own cultivation and skills were strong. It had enough faith in itself even when facing other ancient beings, let alone one that was sealed. Now, however, it suddenly felt a bit apprehensive. After all, its original body had been killed not too long ago. This clone was much weaker, so it couldn't face the Lord of Slaughter so calmly anymore.

Fortunately, the Lord of Slaughter still complied with the prior vow. As long as it agreed and signed the soul oath, there would be no chance of a betrayal.

With the protection of a powerful pet like the Lord of Slaughter, the Shadow Monster King could slowly recover to its peak. It wouldn't have to worry about attacks from strong opponents while it was recovering.

As it thought about all of these things, the satisfaction in its eyes only grew greater. It didn't waste any time and instead quickly chanted an incantation. Runes rushed forth in a waterfall-like torrent.

Zu An tried to raise the Sun Slaying Bow again, but the Snow Lady stopped him and said, "Their oath has already received the acknowledgement of the world. If you attack them now, you'll only bring the world's retaliation upon yourself."

When Zu An heard that, he couldn't help but say in disappointment, "But once they complete the oath, won't we just be sheep waiting for slaughter?" He had paid such a great price to seriously injure the Shadow Monster King, and yet it now had an even stronger helper. Just the thought alone was enough to make one feel despair.

Even so, the Snow Lady only smiled and said, "Being able to die together with you isn't so bad either."

Zu An was speechless.

Sis, do you know what's going on around us right now? And yet you're still having romantic delusions?

All of his mental strength was focused on how to deal with this situation before him. He didn't have the extra energy to think about what was going on with her.

Mo Xi's Farewell Nanchao could sever oaths, but there was too big of a difference in strength between her and these two. Thus, the skill would probably be useless. And even if they severed the oath, wouldn't the Lord of Slaughter then be free to do whatever it wanted?

Just then, the oath ceremony came to an end. The Shadow Monster King roared with laughter, exclaiming, "I never expected to be able to obtain such a powerful pet! In the future, I'll definitely be able to subdue even more worlds and become the greatest across the many realms!"

The Lord of Slaughter said in its dull monotone, “The oath is already complete. It’s time to bring me out, right?”

When he saw the situation, Zu An quickly fired an arrow at the Shadow Monster King. He couldn’t gather the strength to fire a true Sun Slaying Arrow anymore. However, the Shadow Monster King wasn’t as strong as before either, so he hoped it would be enough to stop it in time.

“Haha, it’s too late!” The Shadow Monster King laughed madly.

It had been stalling the whole time to refine the seal. It had only done that because it was naturally cautious even in the face of certain victory. After all, it had witnessed all kinds of monstrous and grotesque skills and knew it couldn’t be overconfident no matter how good the situation looked. It had thus left behind a certain precaution.

formed a hand seal, and a streak of light flew at the mountain. Soon after, the golden void chains that were still around the mountain gradually disappeared, and the Lord of Slaughter leaped out with a thunderous roar. Then, the mountain fell to the ground again, but what it had been pressing down on was no longer there.

The arrow Zu An fired arrived in front of the Shadow Monster King just then, but a large mouth suddenly bit down on the arrow. Then, it closed, and the late Fiend Emperor’s arrow that was comparable to an immortal-grade weapon was crushed to pieces instantly.

Zu An was speechless.

Every single one of this guy’s teeth is tougher than an immortal-grade weapon!

Is its entire mouth full of deity-grade weapons?

When it saw that, the Shadow Monster King’s smile became even bigger. It flew up to the Lord of Slaughter and reached out to stroke its head, saying, “Well done!” Its pet was so strong! The Shadow Monster King was already imagining how it would use the Lord of Slaughter to kill its old enemies.

Just then, the Lord of Slaughter suddenly grinned. Its terrifying teeth emerged, and it bit down on the Shadow Monster Lord as fast as lightning.

Even so, the Shadow Monster King was still a powerful ruler of its own domain and it evaded quickly; however, half of its body was still bitten off. The upper half that remained darted away in horror. Black liquid continuously flowed out from the wound like a stream of blood.

“You were really going to treat me as your pet? Even something like you?” the Lord of Slaughter remarked mockingly. It chewed for a bit, and with a gulp, half of the Shadow Monster King’s body was swallowed. A satisfied look appeared on its face. “It has already been far, far too long since my last meal. This taste really is too wonderful.”

Zu An was also frightened when he saw that. He quickly took the Snow Lady with him and backed up.

“Why... Why can you hurt me?” the Shadow Monster King exclaimed, its expression was full of alarm and puzzlement. After all, the two of them had just signed a master and servant agreement. For a pet, the first principle was that it couldn't harm its master, and it had to unconditionally agree to its master’s orders. Furthermore, the master could decide the life and death of its pet at any time.

The Lord of Slaughter revealed a hint of ridicule as it said, “You probably had no idea that the incantation of that oath you found after untold tribulations was something I personally left behind in the past, right?”

“Impossible! That was definitely an incantation to establish a contract between master and servant!” the Shadow Monster King cried, its expression twisting. It was no fool; there was no way it wouldn't have examined the incantation.

“It is indeed a contract between master and servant, but I ingeniously inserted a hidden condition, which was that the stronger party would be the master, and the weaker would be the servant. What a pity it is that you're weaker than me, making me the true master, while you're the servant and pet.”

The Shadow Monster King was speechless.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2076: No Weaknesses

In reality, the Shadow Monster King wasn't completely unprepared for this. It had already anticipated this possibility when it first obtained the incantation, but it was incredibly strong at the time, and hadn't thought that there would be anything here stronger than itself. As such, it had thought it naturally wouldn't need to fear the incantation's rebound. Even if this Lord of Slaughter was an incredibly famous ancient destroyer, the Shadow Monster King had its own pride and confidence too, and hadn't thought it would lose in a confrontation.

How could it have anticipated that its original body would be destroyed, though? It was already far weaker than normal. It had been in such a hurry to get revenge and recover its strength that it had briefly overlooked that point. But now, it was already too late for regrets. Now that it was in a clone body, it wasn't as powerful as before; on top of that, it had been bitten in half, so it could die at any time. Thus, it began to panic. It hurriedly bowed in respect, saying, "Revered Lord of Slaughter, it was me who was too rude just now. From now on, I am willing to serve your respected self and act on your orders."

The Lord of Slaughter looked at the Shadow Monster King's remaining half that was fluttering in the air, as if it was a candlelight that could go out at any moment. It couldn't help but sneer, saying, "What a pity. I've never taken in trash as my subordinate."

When it sensed the Lord of Slaughter's killing intent, the Shadow Monster King's expression changed greatly. It pleaded, "Lord of Slaughter, it was me who saved you! You cannot bite the hand that feeds you!"

"Saved me?" A ferocious look appeared in the Lord of Slaughter's eyes as it stared at the Shadow Monster King, roaring, "You only wished to enslave me! You even added some terms to the incantation that would turn me completely into your pet, so I could never betray you and only let you take advantage of me. If it weren't for that, I might have really spared your life."

The Shadow Monster King cursed itself inwardly.

Whose fault is it that you're so strong that I couldn't feel at ease without those additional conditions?

Even so, explaining further now was already meaningless. It could sense the Lord of Slaughter's killing intent. It turned around and fled without any

intention of coming back. It was actually surprised at how fast it could still move despite being seriously injured.

I have to find a place to hide and recover properly. Once I recover to my peak strength, I'll settle things with this Lord of Slaughter after.

However, its expression suddenly darkened as a foul stench surrounded it. It reflexively raised its head and saw a bloody mouth descend from above, and just like that, its head was bitten right off.

Crunch, crunch...

With a few bites, the bloody mouth swallowed it all down. The Shadow Monster King was powerful, though. Even through all of this, it didn't immediately die. Its headless body reached out and groped around blindly, as if it was instinctively looking for its own head.

Just then, the Lord of Slaughter devoured the rest of its body with a single bite.

Burp~

What followed was a satisfied burp, as if the meal was extremely pleasing. The Lord of Slaughter remarked, "It's been so long since I've enjoyed such a tasty meal. Eating is the most enjoyable thing in the world, indeed."

Far off in the distance, Zu An had a strange expression. He had seen the Shadow Monster King fleeing clearly at extreme speed, like a rainbow flying into the distance. But then, with only the strength of the Lord of Slaughter's legs, its massive body had actually leaped right in front of the Shadow Monster King. The Shadow Monster King was thus devoured without any chance to react.

When Zu An first saw the Lord of Slaughter's alien dinosaur-like appearance, he'd thought that it wouldn't excel in speed. He'd thought that with its powerful body, it would mainly fight in close combat. Now, however, he immediately understood it. Its body was already so strong that it exceeded the domain of certain physical laws. It didn't need to rely on any movement skills to attack anymore.

The Snow Lady quietly said to Zu An, "I'll carry you, so let's leave this place quickly."

Zu An replied with a bitter smile, "If only there was a chance to leave."

Sure enough, the Lord of Slaughter's massive eyes turned in their direction. It asked, "It was the two of you who fought against the Shadow Monster King just now, am I right?"

"Yes. The enemy of an enemy is a friend. Is your respected self the Lord of Slaughter? I am Zu An, and this is the Snow Lady," Zu An said with a big smile. Inwardly, however, he was quickly trying to think of ways of dealing with this situation.

The Snow Lady had a strange expression.

This guy really knows how to suck up. You can even become friends with something like that?

"The enemy of your enemy is your friend?" the Lord of Slaughter repeated, chuckling. "What an amusing line. To be honest, I should be thanking the two of you for weakening the Shadow Monster King."

"There's no need for thanks. It's enough as long as we just return to doing our own thing," Zu An said. He then asked to test the waters, "What does your respected self plan to do now? Are you planning to return to your original world to seize your lost throne?"

"Of course I need to go back," the Lord of Slaughter said.

Zu An sighed in relief when he heard its words, and yet what he heard next covered his body in goosebumps. The Lord of Slaughter continued, "Even so, I first have to have a proper meal in this world before going back. It's already been far, far too long since I've eaten anything. Has it been a few thousand years, or tens of thousands of years..."

Zu An asked sullenly, "May I ask what your respected self wishes to eat? I still have some pull in this world, so I can prepare all sorts of plentiful food for your respected self."

"Living creatures, of course. Ah, I'm getting excited just imagining the fountains of blood," the Lord of Slaughter said, looking extremely moved. "But I feel like you might not be able to bear that much of a burden."

“How many do you need?” Zu An asked. As soon as he heard that it wanted living creatures, he immediately realized that there was no way the two of them could escape. He just wanted to stall for some time to recover a bit and think of countermeasures.

“How many do I want?” the Lord of Slaughter repeated, smiling cruelly before answering, “All living creatures in this world, of course.”

Zu An and the Snow Lady were speechless. Even though Zu An had already predicted something similar, he hadn't expected it to be this cruel.

As if sensing the changes to the two individuals' emotions, a hint of mockery appeared in the Lord of Slaughter's eyes. It said, “Even though I don't know how two weak beings like the two of you were able to injure the Shadow Monster King so badly, I can't leave behind any dangers that can potentially threaten me.”

As soon as it finished what it wanted to say, it instantly moved next to the two of them. Its teeth that could even crush immortal-grade weapons covered the skies, and a thick stench filled the air.

The two had already prepared for battle, though. The Snow Lady turned into a snowstorm that carried Zu An to another location. At the same time, with a wave of her hand, endless icicles came out of their original location to impale the aggressor. However, those sharp icicles couldn't leave behind even the smallest mark on the Lord of Slaughter's skin. They broke apart one after another.

The Lord of Slaughter's thick tail swept out horizontally. Zu An and the Snow Lady reached out their hands to block at the same time, but the two were instantly blasted a thousand meters away. Zu An coughed out several mouthfuls of blood. Ice and snow fell from the Snow Lady's entire body, and cracks even appeared on her skin. Fortunately, snowflakes fluttered and the surface of her body quickly returned to its original state.

As it looked at the two of them, the Lord of Slaughter grinned, taunting, “Is that all you've got?”

“Be careful. The strength of its flesh seems to have already exceeded a certain limit” Zu An hurriedly explained. Speaking optimistically, apart from its outer appearance looking a bit strange, the Lord of Slaughter was a purely physical fighter that had fully maxed out its defense, speed, and power.

The Snow Lady grunted in agreement. Wind and snow spun in her hand, gradually forming a sword.

When he saw the appearance of the sword, Zu An was stunned, thinking, *It seems a bit familiar...*

However, he didn't have time to think about that in detail, because the Lord of Slaughter's attack arrived again. It was so fast that the Snow Lady didn't have time to bring Zu An away. Fortunately, Zu An had already recovered a bit. He pushed the Snow Lady away, crying out, "We'll evade separately!"

Then, he used his instant movement skill to teleport a hundred meters away. The Snow Lady turned into wind and snow.

"I hate you skill users the most." The Lord of Slaughter harrumphed.

After some hesitation, it chased after Zu An. After all, the Snow Lady was made of ice and snow. It had already been crushed by these snowy mountains for too long and really didn't want to spend a moment longer with anything that had to do with snow. Rather, it was more fond of fresh and living creatures like Zu An. The taste would definitely be exquisite.

Soon after, Zu An's flickering figure quickly reappeared. Unfortunately, no matter how he tried to evade, the Lord of Slaughter always followed right behind like a relentless shadow. Zu An was incredibly alarmed. The fact that this thing could catch up to his instant movement by relying purely on its speed was absolutely absurd.

Meanwhile, the Snow Lady nervously tried to provide help, but the two were way too fast. She wasn't able to hit the enemy with her skills.

On the other hand, Zu An was able to retaliate several times along the way, but the enemy seemed to have magic immunity. His various skills weren't able to do much at all. He couldn't help but become a bit numb. How was he supposed to win against a powerful physical fighter who had magic immunity as well?

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2077: Weapon of Deities

Zu An, in particular, was seriously injured. It was now a completely one-sided battle, no matter how one looked at the situation. The one saving grace was that Zu An could use the Heaven Devouring Sutra to neutralize a certain degree of his opponent's shocking strength. Together with 'The Book', which warned him ahead of time, he was always able to avoid danger beforehand.

Even so, he was still constantly in danger. The Lord of Slaughter was just too strong, and The Book's anticipation skill wasn't omnipotent. As a comparison, if one were to play the Three Kingdoms Game as Zhuge Liang, even with the starsight skill that allowed its user to examine the tiles before playing them and even change the order of those tiles, the end result was still sometimes unavoidable.

As the saying went: It is easy to know the will of heaven; it is hard to defy the will of heaven!

Eventually, there was an instance where, after evading multiple times in quick succession, Zu An wasn't able to dodge anymore. He was hit by one of the Lord of Slaughter's attacks, and his body slammed straight into the nearby mountain peak.

Boom!

The landscape shook violently. Half of the majestic snowy mountain even collapsed!

The Lord of Slaughter was about to seize the moment and deliver a lethal blow when several roaring tornadoes suddenly appeared all around him. At first, they were rather small, but they quickly grew larger at a visible rate. All of the accumulated snow was swept up by the wind, covering the entire world in blinding white. At that moment, an ordinary person wouldn't even be able to see a meter ahead of them!

Zu An used the chance to crawl out of the deep crater his body had created from the impact. His clothes were in tatters, and there were three claw marks across his chest, leaving a wound so deep his bones were visible. Even his pulsing heart was vaguely visible. His body was already as tough as that of a giant dragon, and yet he was left in such a state from a single claw attack. It was easy to see just how strong the Lord of Slaughter was from that.

However, Zu An couldn't be bothered with his injuries. Instead, he quickly left his original location to avoid being attacked again. He looked at the endless snowstorm going on all around him, realizing that he had lost track of the Lord of Slaughter's whereabouts. He frowned.

Why is the world suddenly changing like this?

He quickly expanded his divine sense to investigate the area around him, but the wind and snow seemed to be a great hindrance to his divine sense, causing its scope to be largely reduced. He was used to having a 'panoramic map' that covered everything around him, so he felt as if he had suddenly gone blind. He was extremely shocked and wondered if the Lord of Slaughter was also affected. If it wasn't affected, wouldn't he be just like a sheep awaiting slaughter?

Suddenly, he was greatly alarmed, as a sharp claw tore through the wind and snow to grab at his back. He was just about to evade when a whirlwind of snow wrapped around him and took him several kilometers away.

"Leave this place to me. You should just focus on resting," said a voice. The wind and snow that blew over Zu An seemed to take on the Snow Lady's cold and pure appearance.

Zu An sighed in relief. So this was something she had created! He didn't refuse and try to push himself at such a critical juncture. The Great Snowy Mountains were the Snow Lady's home field. Only something like this could live up to the experience he'd had in the past, back when he and Yan Xuehen were being chased.

He sat down on the ground right where he was and quickly tossed several medicines into his mouth, including some that Ji Xiaoxi had given him when he left the capital and ones he had received from Yu Yanluo a few days ago. The Second Empress had also shoved a few into his pockets. In this world, all of them were considered medicine of the highest quality. Unfortunately, he was still suffering from the rebound of using Keyboard Come. Even though these medicines were useful to some degree, the time it took for them to take effect was too slow. Perhaps he would see their healing effect if he rested for half a month or so, but how could he possibly wait that long right now?

After some hesitation, he took out a porcelain bottle. He poured all of the liquid it contained, which was overflowing with natural ki, straight into his mouth. This was the Feather Mountain spiritual springwater he had obtained

from the Fiend races' Imperial Tomb. It was rumored to even be able to revive the dead and restore flesh to white bones. It had already been used several times, and this was the last bit. Once it was used up, there would be no more.

When he thought of that, he suddenly realized something. In the end, he decided to leave a bit left in the bottom.

Shortly after, he groaned, and blood poured out from all the cracks on his body. After all, he'd eaten things that were all among the best medicines in the world. All of them had incredible healing effects. If anyone else had tried to consume them all at once, the combination of those medicines could very well have become a fatal toxin. Only someone like Zu An, who had a powerful body that had been refined several times over, could hold on and not die.

He then did his best to use his primordial ki to heal his internal injuries. Faint white light surrounded his entire body. Fortunately, the wind and snow all around him were also white in color. Otherwise, he would have been a bit worried that he would be bringing too much attention to himself.

A while later, the wound in his chest also began to move, healing at a visible rate. The fine bits of blood that had seeped out from his body because of the rebound from Keyboard Come were also gradually absorbed back into his wounds. At the same time, the cracks covering his body also started slowly healing.

Roughly an incense stick's worth of time later, Zu An opened his eyes. Even though he hadn't completely recovered from his injuries yet, he was sixty to seventy percent there. He already had some strength to fight with. More importantly, however, the Snow Lady couldn't hold on for much longer. He could already hear her muffled groans due to her injuries.

The Lord of Slaughter's reckless laughter echoed from within the wind and snow. "Hahah, I've caught you!"

With a loud noise, the wind and snow suddenly scattered. The Snow Lady fell onto the mountain. She clutched her shoulder with an expression of pain. Her left arm was gone! Judging from the scar left behind, it was obvious that the Lord of Slaughter had bitten it off. Just what kind of secret method had it used to be able to rip it off her body?

The Snow Lady's entire body was suddenly surrounded by snowy mist. Soon after, a brand new arm appeared. Even though her face was really white to

begin with, it now looked even paler. It was obvious that she was seriously injured. After regenerating her arm, she was also nearing her limit.

The Lord of Slaughter spat out a large pile of snow off to the side, grumbling, "I hate things related to snow the most."

Anyone who had been crushed under snowy mountains as long as it had would probably hate snow this much too, after all.

"Even though it doesn't taste good, it's still better to kill you," the Lord of Slaughter continued as a cruel smile appeared in its eyes. It prepared to pounce over and completely kill the Snow Lady.

Suddenly, a figure darted forth from one side, stabbing a pitch-black dagger at its eye. It was completely horrified.

Why didn't I sense his presence at all? And he didn't even emit the slightest bit of killing intent before he attacked! Otherwise, there's no way I wouldn't have detected this attack at all!

It turned out Zu An had borrowed the instant the wind and snow scattered to teleport to the Lord of Slaughter's side. He used the Unshakable Daoist Manual to hide all of his killing intent, then used the Star Shattering Imprint to increase his power tenfold. Just in case, he used the Poisonous Prick, which was most suitable for surprise attacks. It could kill as long as it wounded its opponent!

He even accounted for the possibility that its skin's defensive power could be too strong and that the Poisonous Prick wouldn't necessarily be able to pierce through, which was why he chose to attack the eye. Even if its skin was invulnerable, its eyes wouldn't be that tough, right?

The Lord of Slaughter really was strong. Even against such a perfect ambush, it was still able to immediately evade to the side at the last minute. At the very least, it managed to avoid being stabbed in the eye. But how could Zu An's full powered attack be avoided that easily? In the end, its cheek was still cut by the dagger, leaving a several-inch-long cut. Viscous green blood spilled out.

Boom!

The enemy's thick tail smashed into Zu An's chest, sending him almost a kilometer away! He felt as if every single bone in his body was on the verge of breaking. And yet, he couldn't hide the smile on his face.

This guy was hit by the Poisonous Prick! It's not a creature of death either...

Sure enough, streak after streak of black profound runes appeared around the Lord of Slaughter's wound. They quickly extended across its body. However, when they reached halfway across its body, they suddenly stopped. Then, with a crack, the black runes actually shattered!

Zu An was completely stupefied. After all, the Poisonous Prick was one of his greatest trump cards. He had managed to make a comeback through the harshest of situations precisely through relying on it. Unless the enemy was already deceased, it had never failed before. Why was it failing now?

"A trifling dagger actually holds the reaper's curse?" the Lord of Slaughter exclaimed as it looked at the pitch-black dagger in Zu An's hands. Its eyes narrowed.

"Why are you still fine?!" Zu An couldn't hold himself back from asking.

"I forgot to tell you that I am the most perfect weapon created by the deities. No laws can affect me," the Lord of Slaughter said, sounding rather proud of itself. It loved destroying its opponent's confidence like this and watching as its prey fell into absolute despair.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2078: Reunion

Zu An was stunned. He noticed something that the creature had just said, though.

Weapon of the deities? Shouldn't normal weapons be like swords and spears? This thing is like a freaking t-rex, how does it resemble a weapon at all?

And what are these deities?

After what had happened in the Fiend races' imperial tomb secret dungeon, he had some exposure to the celestial court and the ancient era's legendary immortals. He knew that there really were deities in the world. Still, he wondered if the deities this Lord of Slaughter spoke of were the same as the deities of the celestial court that he'd seen.

"If you aren't affected by any magical laws, how were you sealed underneath this snowy mountain in the past?" Zu An asked in frustration. If it really wasn't affected by the different laws, that would really be hard to deal with. Many of his skills were actually just made up of various magical laws, and those were the skills that he relied on to defeat those stronger than himself. But now, they were all completely ineffective against this enemy. That was why he had to find out just how powerful this immunity was.

"Hmph, what else could it be? I was fooled by a crafty bastard..." The Lord of Slaughter gritted its teeth in anger as it spoke. "Now that I'm looking at you again, that bastard looked a bit similar to you. In that case, I'll just take out my resentment on you!" After saying that, it charged straight at Zu An.

Zu An quickly raised his sword to protect himself. His body was actually extremely tough, but now that he was injured, he really couldn't withstand its ferocious attacks. Helpless to do anything else, he could only rely on his instant movement skill from time to time.

However, the Lord of Slaughter seemed like an absolute fighting machine. After fighting for a while, it gradually became accustomed to his skills. After Zu An teleported twice and reappeared in the sky, it was actually already waiting for him at his final location ahead of time. It opened its bloody mouth and chomped down in his direction.

At that moment, Zu An's skill was on its 'cooldown' period. In reality, under the cooldown reduction effects of Mo Xi's skills, it was already extremely short. Ordinary people wouldn't be able to even notice that it existed, but the Lord of Slaughter was a fighting genius. Not only did it accurately seize upon that point, it even predicted where Zu An would dodge.

It was already too late for Zu An to use his skill to dodge. As he felt the threat of death approach, he looked dejected. He decisively slashed with his sword at the monster's mouth in an attempt to take it down with him.

Suddenly, a bright lantern appeared in the sky. Its yellow light covered the Lord of Slaughter. Then, someone let out a light scoff, and a wall of light

suddenly appeared in front of Zu An. It was the light element's ultimate defensive skill, the Wall of Sighs! And naturally, the lantern was the Empress Lantern!

The Lord of Slaughter's movements became sluggish for the slightest of moments. The next moment, a claw lashed out toward the sky.

Boom!

The Empress Lantern exploded into pieces, and the yellow light also quickly vanished. At the same time, the Lord of Slaughter's head slammed into the Wall of Sighs. The most powerful defense of the light element actually couldn't even last for a single second before shattering into pieces.

Even so, that bit of time was already enough for Zu An to catch his breath. He was able to increase the distance again. Then, he looked at the stunning and graceful young lady standing in the distance, exclaiming, "Honglei!"

The woman was dressed in a brilliant red overcoat that made her even more captivating. Who else could it be but Qiu Honglei? The last time they'd seen each other was at the Lake of Hatred. He had never expected to meet her again here, and for her to save him, no less!

As she looked at him, Qiu Honglei frowned. Then, her gaze shifted to the Empress Lantern in the sky that was now in pieces, and an absent-minded expression appeared on her face. This was an artifact that her master had given her. Even though it wasn't the original, it had been made through the collective wisdom and craftsmanship of several generations of the Devil Sect's elites. It had roughly eighty percent of the original's power. This lantern had accompanied her for too many years already, staying at her side through countless dangers. It had helped her win against countless powerful enemies, and yet she'd never expected it to be destroyed here.

While she was feeling absent-minded, a foul stench swept toward her. The Lord of Slaughter had finally exploited Zu An's opening and was about to kill him, and yet it was all ruined because of this woman. It wouldn't be so easy to create such a chance again, because Zu An was like a slippery loach that was incredibly hard to catch. It was furious that the woman had ruined its plans. In that case, since it couldn't catch Zu An, it would take its anger out on her first.

Qiu Honglei had been to the daoist secret dungeon, so she had seen all kinds of powerful beings. Her reactions to situations and her mental state were

already entirely different from the past. Dazzling white light instantly appeared in front of her. It was the light element skill, Blinding Radiance! At the same time, she created another Wall of Sighs in front of her. She also took out a pair of curved blades to use her most powerful skill, 'Nebula Rend'. It was as if a starry cosmos appeared in front of her.

If Yun Jianyue were here, she would definitely be extremely gratified, because Qiu Honglei's cultivation was now much more powerful than before. Apart from Chu Chuyan, there was probably no one else among the daoists' younger generation who could face her anymore.

Unfortunately, the enemy she was facing right now was far beyond her imagination. The terrifying Nebula Rend clearly hit the Lord of Slaughter's head; normally, the enemy would have their body quickly shredded up by the chaotic spatial power. However, her attack actually scattered just from a brute force collision! On top of that, in its eyes, even the Wall of Sighs was no different from a sheet of paper.

Only the blinding white light seemed to have some effect on the Lord of Slaughter. It reflexively closed its eyes, and its body froze up a bit. After being crushed under a mountain peak for countless years, it was already unused to bright light.

Using that moment when it was caught off guard, Zu An picked up Qiu Honglei and left this place. He initially wanted to use the chance to kill the Lord of Slaughter, but there wasn't enough time for him to do considerable damage at all. Rather, both of them could lose their lives instead.

When it saw that it had lost sight of its target, the Lord of Slaughter roared furiously a few times. It was about to chase after them when the Snow Lady blocked it with a sword, buying some time for Zu An and Qiu Honglei.

"Why are you here?" Zu An asked while observing the battle.

"I was out for a random stroll. How could I have known that I would even run into you here?" Qiu Honglei harrumphed, but her body was no longer as rigid as before.

She had been completely stupefied when she inadvertently saw Zu An and her master doing the deed. On one side was her most beloved lover, while the other side was her most beloved master!

She was an orphan who had been raised by Yun Jianyue alone. Even though her master had been harsh on her, the love and care Yun Jianyue showed her was clear. The two were master and disciple in name, but she had already begun treating her master as family a long time ago. That was why she had been so shocked to see that scene.

Thus, she had fled the scene, feeling completely disheartened. Her only thought had been to leave the two of them as far behind as possible. Eventually, she unknowingly ended up in the dangerous Great Snowy Mountains. Only in a place as desolate and uninhabited as this would neither the human and fiend regent nor the Devil Sect Master find her.

At first, she felt awful, but as she spent her time in this solitary world of ice and snow, her mind gradually calmed down. Since 'that' had already happened, it just had to be dealt with. In the end, she'd decided to help her master and Ah Zu. After all, in her eyes, her master was just too unfortunate. Even though everyone else feared Yun Jianyue and thought that she was a murderous demon, only a disciple like Qiu Honglei knew just how lonely her master was. Alas, because of the whims of fate, Yun Jianyue had been forced to be alone all these years.

Qiu Honglei had previously had thoughts of playing matchmaker for her master, but every single attempt had failed and she'd even ended up angering her master, receiving a nasty beating as a result. As a result, she eventually came to understand that her master's standards were incredibly high, such that there was no man in this world that could reach them.

She'd thought that her master would live out the rest of her life alone, but now, there was a man that Yun Jianyue actually found favorable. That should have been something incredibly blissful! The only sad part was that the man was also Qiu Honglei's own lover...

After thinking back to the kindness her master had shown her all these years, she'd made the decision to back out. However, when she thought about her lover, she still felt incredibly heartbroken. She'd made the choice to live out her pitiful life alone on this snowy mountain. But who would have thought that she would suddenly sense such an intense battle today? The blast waves had even made her feel alarmed and horrified. How could there be something this powerful in this world?

She'd instinctively wanted to leave, but then she sensed that the battle's energy was a bit familiar, and something about it really resembled Ah Zu's

aura. Even though she hadn't expected such a great coincidence as Ah Zu being here, she still couldn't suppress her curiosity and went over to investigate. As it turned out, she really did her sweetheart, and even helped him out!

"How did you end up provoking such a terrifying monster?!" Qiu Honglei exclaimed. Even though she couldn't help but recall the despicable thing Zu An had done with her master when she saw him and really wanted to stab him a few times, she couldn't be bothered with that right now, since they were facing such a great enemy.

"It's a long story. We might really end up dying together as sweethearts this time," Zu An said with a bitter smile. Qiu Honglei's cultivation was way too low to be of any help. She had already overperformed just now, and yet it didn't do much to change the greater situation. She couldn't even run away. After all, no matter how long she ran for, the Lord of Slaughter would still be able to easily catch up.

"Hmph, who wants to die as sweethearts with you? You can go and find master to do that with you." Qiu Honglei harrumphed.

Before Zu An could even reply, the Snow Lady snapped icily, "Are you two finished yet? I'm about to die fighting over here!"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2079: Follow in Death

Qiu Honglei blushed. She pushed Zu An away and gave the Snow Lady a curious look. At the same time, she was shocked by the Snow Lady's beautiful appearance. She had never expected a person made of snow to be this beautiful.

But why had the Snow Lady sounded a bit jealous just then? Could it be that there was something between her and Ah Zu? Qiu Honglei's expression became extremely strange.

There's no way, right? Just how long has it been since Zu An and I separated, and yet he's already become close with another woman? And can she even be considered a person?

Ah Zu's tastes are always so weird. He's a hundred percent trash!

You have successfully trolled Qiu Honglei for +311 +311 +311...

...

Zu An, who was fighting earnestly on the front lines, couldn't help but feel baffled.

Why is she angry? Is it because of the affairs involving her master or because I'm fighting together with the Snow Lady?

However, when faced with the Lord of Slaughter's attacks, he didn't have a chance to think carefully. As he grabbed the Snow Lady and avoided an attack that would have definitely killed him, he took out a drop of murky liquid from the Brilliant Glass Bead with a grave expression. It was the spoils of war he had obtained from the War Priest, the Naihe Oblivion Water! It could completely erase the memories and will of any creature it touched, almost like reformatting a hard drive. It would turn someone into an idiot who knew absolutely nothing.

Even though he hadn't completely refined it for himself yet, he could now use Blue Mallard's ability to just barely control it. Thus, the murky yellow droplet in the air began to squirm. As it flew into the air, it slowly elongated into a strand. The higher it flew, the larger that strand became. Eventually, it turned into a river that swept at the Lord of Slaughter.

Zu An's timing was excellent; he unleashed it at the perfect time as it charged over, making it impossible for the Lord of Slaughter to dodge. Soon after, the monster was completely submerged.

"Naihe Oblivion Water?" the Lord of Slaughter exclaimed in surprise. It clearly recognized the origins of this water.

...

In the distance, Qiu Honglei was a bit worried. It didn't look as if the Lord of Slaughter was affected much by the Naihe Oblivion Water.

As expected, half of its body emerged from the water. It roared with laughter and exclaimed, "How can you be so stupid? I already told you that these kinds of laws couldn't affect me!"

The Naihe Oblivion Water's effects belonged to a certain high-level magical law.

However, the Lord of Slaughter's laughter suddenly came to a halt, and it let out a bitter scream. In that moment, Zu An had leaped out from the Naihe Oblivion Water while surrounded by a bubble. In his hand was a hook weapon that stabbed into its mouth. The Lord of Slaughter rolled back and forth on the ground as if it had gone mad, leaving behind a huge mess. A nearby mountain was even smashed in half by its swinging tail.

"What the hell did you prick me with?! It hurts like hell!" it screamed as it clutched its mouth, seeming about to break out into tears. Its entire mouth was swollen like Crayon Shin-chan's face.

Zu An dangled a scorpion tail in his hands. A smile finally appeared on his face. Naturally, he'd known that the Naihe Oblivion Water's magical laws wouldn't be able to take down the Lord of Slaughter. His grandiose attack was just a smokescreen, all to catch it off guard when it was feeling overconfident.

The Scorpion King's tail contained an extreme toxin that wasn't derived from the power of magical laws. Sure enough, it was effective! Back then, even he had felt a bit of fear toward this scorpion tail despite his poison immunity. Its poison was clearly top-notch across the various worlds. He just didn't know if it could poison the Lord of Slaughter to death.

Just then, the Lord of Slaughter suddenly grabbed its mouth, then clawed out a deep wound on the surface. Green blood flowed out, mixed with a significant amount of black that clearly indicated poisoned blood. When the blood landed on the snowy ground, a large amount of snow quickly turned black. The ground was also corroded by the black blood, creating large holes.

"So it was the Scorpion King's poison," the Lord of Slaughter said as it looked at the hook in Zu An's hand. "That poison might be effective against other powerful beings, but my blood also carries powerful corrosive properties, so poisons aren't too effective against me."

As it spoke, the wound around its mouth stopped swelling, and completely green blood came out from the injury with no sign of poisoning left. Still, the pain it had felt in the beginning was still real. It had actually suffered this much because of a weak human! That was absolutely intolerable!

You have successfully trolled the Lord of Slaughter for +998 +998 +998...

Zu An felt a chill run through his entire body. He hadn't expected even that to fail. To be honest, this Lord of Slaughter hadn't given him as much pressure as the earlier Shadow Monster King at first, seeming a bit easier to defeat. But when they really fought, he'd found out that between its immunities to magical laws, and now its blood's ability to neutralize even such an extreme poison, it really had no weaknesses! No wonder it was called the perfect machine of slaughter.

The Lord of Slaughter didn't give him any time to think. It was already furious from falling for Zu An's tricks. At that moment, it frantically charged at them. It only had a single thought, which was that only by ripping these bastards into pieces would it be able to vent out its resentment!

In Zu An's hand, the Tai'e Sword shone brilliantly. He was about to clash with the Lord of Slaughter directly when he found that the enemy suddenly disappeared. The next second, it appeared in front of Qiu Honglei. Under her shocked expression, it bit down.

The monster had an innate heart of slaughter, after all. Even though it was furious, it still understood who the weak link was here. That was why it went straight after Qiu Honglei. Even though Qiu Honglei did her best to defend and retaliate, the difference between their strength was too much. There was only death waiting for her.

It was already too late for Zu An to head over. He quickly used the position exchange skill to swap positions with Qiu Honglei. Thus, he faced the Lord of Slaughter's full-powered attack himself.

"I already expected that you would come back!" the Lord of Slaughter remarked, smiling nastily.

This human really is hard to catch, darting about like a pest. But if he has to save someone, he can only defend himself passively!

Boom!

The clash from the two sides made everything within a thousand miles tremble. Snow scattered all throughout the air. Amid the expanse of snow, there was a huge explosion of blood!

"Ah Zu!" Qiu Honglei cried, panicking. The monster's blood wasn't red, so the one who had been hurt was clearly Zu An. She could no longer think of her

jealousy over the previous affair. She only had one thought in her head. As long as Ah Zu was safe, nothing else mattered.

The wind and snow gradually scattered. Zu An's sword was stabbed into the snow. His body was covered in horrifying wounds, and he was tottering. He had clearly suffered bitterly from that attack.

The Lord of Slaughter slowly walked out from the wind and snow, pressing closer and closer to him. It said tauntingly, "Keep running! Why aren't you running anymore?"

Zu An had a grave expression. Even if he used his instant movement skill, he probably wouldn't last much longer. On top of that, if it attacked Qiu Honglei again, he would have to save her again, so his mobility advantage was already meaningless.

"Ah Zu, it's all my fault for being a burden," Qiu Honglei said; she could naturally tell what was going on. A hint of decisiveness appeared on her face. Her curved blade moved over to her neck as she decided to end her own life to get rid of her lover's burden.

When he saw that, Zu An was horrified. In his current condition, he couldn't stop her at all.

Fortunately, an icicle knocked Qiu Honglei's curved blade away. The Snow Lady quickly arrived at her side and looked at her coldly, saying, "Don't do something so stupid."

"But I..." Qiu Honglei murmured as her eyes turned red. She hadn't been any help right now, and had only put her lover in more danger.

"Who says you weren't of any help? If you hadn't come in time, I might have already died. You already saved my life, and yet you're still saying you haven't helped," Zu An said with a smile.

Qiu Honglei bit her lip tightly.

Ah Zu is still so kind. He's still comforting me even now.

If she had known it was going to be like this, she wouldn't have left out of anger. She could have just spent this time together with him happily, unlike right now, where this meeting could be the last one they ever had. Her

expression suddenly became resolute. She wouldn't leave him anymore. If he died, she would just end her own life to follow after him. She couldn't let him pass on into the afterlife alone.

"Tsk tsk, look at these two stupid lovers. It's such a pity that I love shattering these beautiful scenes the most," the Lord of Slaughter said with a proud expression. It clearly found ruining these kinds of things really enjoyable.

Zu An's expression became serious. He raised his sword again. There was nothing else he could do right now...

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2080: Shop 58

There was no other choice than to use Keyboard Come. Even though Zu An knew that the consequences were probably beyond what he could handle, everyone here would die if this continued, and the entire world would even fall to enemy hands.

Suddenly, Mi Li quickly said, "Stop! If you use Keyboard Come now, you'll definitely die."

Zu An had a sorrowful smile as he replied, "There will always be some people who still make the same decision despite knowing the consequences."

When she heard the decisiveness in his voice, Mi Li knew that he was now really prepared for death. She couldn't help but panic, saying, "Don't fret yet! There's still another way. I'll teach you something."

"What way?" Zu An asked, stunned. He had never expected Mi Li to tell him such a thing. "Didn't you say that you wouldn't interfere for the sake of my growth?"

Mi Li said impatiently, "That's because you still had a chance of survival back then, but you just didn't realize it yet. I can't even see how you could possibly make it out of this situation, so of course I can't just keep watching anymore!"

The two of them shared a contract of souls. Neither of them wanted the other to die.

“Alright, enough of that nonsense. Remember these incantations...” Mi Li quickly shared some incantations with him. “This is the skill I believe to be the most suitable for you right now. Even though you'll have to pay a bit of a price, it's within the scope of what you can endure. At the very least, it's much better than that Keyboard Come of yours.”

Zu An had a complicated expression as he asked, “Are you really the empress of Qin Shihuang?”

This kind of skill was something that was extremely profound even for his current self. He had faced Qin Shihuang's soul fragment in the past. Even though the emperor was strong, it was definitely not at her level.

“You still have the energy to worry about something like that?” Mi Li sneered.

In that time, the Snow Lady had actually protected Qiu Honglei from the Lord of Slaughter's continuous attacks. However, judging from how dangerous the situation looked, it seemed as if they could perish at any time.

Zu An's expression grew serious. He quickly gathered his thoughts, then chanted the incantations and formed the seals according to Mi Li's instructions. Profound formations immediately appeared all around him, and the entire world seemed to begin resonating with something.

The Lord of Slaughter sensed what was happening. It had already been schemed against by this brat several times, and the things it suffered were still fresh in its memory. It was worried that he was up to something else again and didn't dare to let him carry his plans out fully. It quickly abandoned the two women and ran in his direction.

“Hurry and stop it! We need to buy Ah Zu time!” the Snow Lady cried, turning serious as she brandished the sword in her hand. The ground itself overturned, and countless icicles appeared on its surface as it crashed down on the Lord of Slaughter.

The Lord of Slaughter waved its claws and tore the wall of icicles in its way to pieces. But a second later, even more ice and snow tried to imprison it. It couldn't help but feel a bit annoyed.

Why is this Snow Lady suddenly much stronger than before?

Qiu Honglei also reacted to the situation. She quickly used all sorts of light element skills. She knew that the gap in strength between the Lord of Slaughter and herself was far too great, so she didn't choose to use skills that were heavy in attack power; rather, she switched to support skills instead. This change in strategy proved to be surprisingly effective. When she cooperated with the Snow Lady, they were actually able to temporarily stop the Lord of Slaughter.

Even so, there was something that she was confused about. Why had the Snow Lady also called him Ah Zu? Furthermore, judging from her tone, it sounded as if they were really close.

...

Using the time the two of them bought for him, Zu An finally completed his technique. The sharp and clear peal of a bell suddenly rang out.

Immediately after, the skies split open. A pawn shop-like building appeared. It had a tall sales counter with vertical bar railings covering the surface. A shopkeeper dressed in a swallow-tailed coat was standing behind the counter with a big smile and a bell in hand. The sound had clearly come from this place.

Zu An had a strange expression. This pawn shop was clearly Chinese-style, and yet the shopkeeper was dressed like a western butler. It really was a weird combination.

"World Shop 58, wholeheartedly at your service. My name is Paul; how may I be of assistance today?" the shopkeeper said in greeting, showing Zu An a respectful smile.

"Shop 58?" the Lord of Slaughter repeated, stunned. It seemed to have recalled a certain rumor. It could no longer remain calm anymore.

Zu An looked at the golden letters 'Shop 58' written on the pillars. When he then thought about the shopkeeper's name, he thought to himself, *Do these different worlds also watch the NBA?*

He quickly collected his thoughts. He pointed at the Lord of Slaughter and said, "I want your help in getting rid of that creature."

The swallow-coated shopkeeper named Paul sized up the Lord of Slaughter. There was a bit of surprise in his eyes as he exclaimed, "Hm? It's actually a weapon made by the deities in the past! This is a bit tricky indeed. However, as long as you can pay a sufficient price, we are willing to help."

The Lord of Slaughter's expression finally changed. It roared, "Kid, if you have the skills, then fight me directly! How can you be proud if you win by cheating?!"

You have successfully trolled the Lord of Slaughter for +666 +666 +666...

At the same time, it looked toward the shopkeeper and asked, "I share no grudges with you, so why are you making me your enemy?"

Shopkeeper Paul smiled and said, "We are merely a shop doing business. There's no reason for us to refuse our customers."

The Lord of Slaughter's eyes moved around as it said, "Then I'll do business with you! That punk is so weak and I'm so much stronger. The stuff I can bring out is definitely worth more!"

Shopkeeper Paul shook his head, replying, "Business has to be done one at a time. He was the one who summoned me, so of course I need to take his business first. Once this business is finished, I will then receive your respected self's business."

The Lord of Slaughter was speechless.

I might already be dead once you finish your business! How would I still be able to do any business?

It decided to make the first move as a display of strength, so it ran straight at the shopkeeper. It was used to being the stronger one wherever it went, so it naturally had its pride. Even though it had heard some legends surrounding Shopkeeper Number 58, they could just be false rumors. It refused to believe that a trifling shopkeeper could really be that strong. As long as it could shatter this space, Shopkeeper 58 would naturally disappear.

Its massive body instantly smashed into the small pawn shop floating in midair. The pawn shop was the most simple and crude sort from the ancient past, with chairs and even railings made of wood. It looked as if anyone reasonably strong could easily break the furniture. No matter which angle one

looked at it from, the Lord of Slaughter should have been able to easily smash apart this shop and rip anyone inside to pieces. After all, even the towering snowy mountains had easily collapsed under its strength.

And yet, astonishingly, there was only a loud noise. The Lord of Slaughter smashed into the wooden railings, and it was sent flying right back! The impact left it on the ground with its four legs facing the sky. Those weak-looking railings didn't budge in the slightest!

The Snow Lady and Qiu Honglei were both happy to see that. After all, this was something Ah Zu had summoned, so the stronger the shopkeeper was, the better, of course.

The Lord of Slaughter quickly struggled to its feet. It roared in anger and charged at the shopkeeper again. When had it ever been humiliated like this in all its years?

Suddenly, Shopkeeper Paul reached out of the window with a gun in hand, aiming it at the Lord of Slaughter. The Lord of Slaughter instantly froze. Its entire body was taut, and there was nervousness in its eyes.

Zu An's eyeballs were about to pop out of their sockets! No matter how he looked at it, the shopkeeper's gun was like a 16th century European firearm from Earth! Its range was short, and its power was weak. It was far inferior to the advanced weapons of the modern age. Yet it was precisely this ancient gun that made the Lord of Slaughter feel as if it was facing its greatest enemy?

Shopkeeper Paul coldly said, "Customer, please do not break the rules."

The Lord of Slaughter chuckled awkwardly and said, "I was just joking just now; please don't take it seriously. Hahaha..."

Zu An realized something. He quickly said, "It attacked your shop just now. Don't tell me you aren't going to punish it at all?"

The Lord of Slaughter gave Zu An a hateful look. This bastard was trying to screw it over!

You have successfully trolled the Lord of Slaughter for +444 +444 +444...

Shopkeeper Paul replied with a smile, "Shop 58 has never done business that has lost us money. Without proper payment, even if it really tore apart our shop, we wouldn't do anything to it. Of course, compensation would still need to be paid."

Zu An was speechless.

This shopkeeper really is thorough...

"Then can we finish the business we were trying to do earlier?" he asked. A moment before, he had still doubted the shopkeeper's ability, but after seeing what just happened, he now definitely had confidence in him.

"We can help you deal with the target, but you need to offer up something of equivalent value to us," Shopkeeper Paul said, looking at Zu An politely.

"What do you need?" Zu An asked. For some reason, he just felt a bit scared from being looked at by those eyes. But when he remembered Mi Li saying that the price was still something he could handle, he felt more at ease.

"This Lord of Slaughter is really strong, so normal things might not be enough. How about this? I'll give you preferential treatment and only ask for your life. Also, I'll need your soul to serve as an apprentice in the shop for five hundred years," Shopkeeper Paul continued; he still had his professional smile on his face, as if what he was saying was already a show of utmost sincerity.

Zu An and the women were completely speechless.

Mi Li was the first to get angry. She borrowed Zu An's mouth to exclaim, "What's going on? Your prices were clearly not that high before!"

She couldn't show up herself, but since her will was the same as Zu An's, it was fine to borrow his mouth to speak too.

Shopkeeper Paul gave Zu An a look of surprise and said, "Your distinguished self seems to understand our shop quite well. That's right, the prices indeed didn't need to be so high in the past, but what can we do about inflation? Pengpeng meat has increased so much in price recently."

A Pengpeng seemed to be a spirit beast similar to a warthog, known across the worlds. Its meat was especially tasty, making it a delicacy across the different worlds.

Mi Li was a bit speechless, replying, "Your Shop 58 doesn't even buy pengpeng meat!"

"But our boss likes it, and the price went up. For his sake, of course we can only increase the price."

Mi Li was speechless. Zu An was also a bit speechless. He hadn't expected to see situations so similar to the ones in his previous world all across the cosmos.

"Are you willing to pay the price? If not, then this business will end. Time is extremely precious for us," Shopkeeper Paul said, then raised his hand to look at his watch. He clearly cared a lot about time.

Zu An was hesitating when the Snow Lady said, "Can I pay the price you just spoke of?"

Zu An panicked and was about to stop her when Shopkeeper Paul shook his head and said, "You have a very pretty soul, but I do not care about female charms. It is still this young hero's soul that is worth a bit more."

The Snow Lady was speechless.

Under the shopkeeper's urging, Zu An was struggling a bit. He could actually reach a similar effect through Keyboard Come, but his soul would then be destroyed. Meanwhile, if he carried out this transaction with the shopkeeper, at least his soul would be preserved and he would have his freedom again after five hundred years. He didn't know which one to pick.

The Snow Lady then secretly asked Qiu Honglei, "Are you willing to sacrifice your life to save Zu An?"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2081: Who Is Calling Me

Chapter 2081: Who Is Calling Me

Qiu Honglei was stunned when she heard the question. There were a thousand thoughts she wanted to say.

What is this woman doing? Of course I'm willing to save Ah Zu, but why isn't she sacrificing herself and is making me do it instead?

Don't tell me she wants to use this chance just to get rid of a love rival?

She really is a bitch!

As someone who was raised in an environment like the Devil Sect, one of constant mutual deception, she was already used to seeing similar tricks. People clearly had selfish intentions, and yet made it sound as if they were justified and honorable.

Hmph, this woman normally looks pure and indifferent, but in the end, she's no different from the rest of them.

Look at her pretending to be some innocent white lotus, hmph!

With her normal personality, she would normally continue to smile and pretend as if she didn't know anything. Then, she would pull some small tricks to make the enemy suffer a double loss. But she was now completely discouraged. She couldn't muster any thoughts of fighting back anymore.

Whatever. It doesn't matter anymore. I already planned to end my life on this snowy mountain. If I can even save Ah Zu, that's good too. I'll just let this bitch get away with her plan.

Endless thoughts stormed through her mind, but in reality, only an instant passed. She reflexively nodded and said, "Of course I'm willing!"

When she heard the reply, the Snow Lady's expression suddenly became a bit complicated.

...

Meanwhile, Shopkeeper Paul was urging Zu An to hurry and make a decision. He also said that the more time passed, the higher a price Zu An would have to pay. After all, Shop 58 had always believed in the principle of 'time is money'.

Zu An was about to make a decision when the Snow Lady stopped him, saying, "Don't agree to his offer. I have a solution, trust me!"

Zu An was puzzled. But when he saw her serious expression, he still nodded.

The Snow Lady quickly said to Qiu Honglei through qi transmission, "Don't you know that Dance Offering to the Universe? Perform that in a bit."

"Huh?" Qiu Honglei was confused why the other person knew about that skill, which she had just obtained from the daoist secret dungeon not too long ago. However, the issue lay in the words that followed. She asked, "I'm not too familiar with that dance; can it really defeat an enemy of this level?"

"It can. It's just that the Dance Offering to the Universe you learned is still incomplete..." the Snow Lady said, then sent a strand of wind and snow around Qiu Honglei, transmitting some information.

Qiu Honglei immediately widened her eyes. She could sense that it was a higher level of Dance Offering to the Universe, but why did this woman know of it? Just who was she?

She quickly learned the contents. Many things she previously hadn't understood now made sense. She felt a sense of enlightenment, and couldn't help but begin to dance. The wind wept as it swept through the world, mournful like the sobbing of countless women.

In the distance, the Lord of Slaughter turned its head. It was a bit confused at what it was seeing.

Did this woman go mad? Why is she suddenly starting to dance?

More importantly, why does it come with its own music?

Every single female voice sounded like a force of nature. The voices were absolutely enchanting, and they relaxed the mind. But what was even more captivating was the stunning figure at the very center. Up until that point, none of those present had realized that a woman's figure could be this gentle and beautiful.

In order to make it easier to dance, Qiu Honglei removed the overcoat around her body. She danced lightly and gracefully while wearing a light pink dress. Every movement looked as if it had been carefully carved by the heavens; she

looked as if there was a gentle radiance shining behind her, revealing her sweet and graceful lines through her clothes. Her dance was beautiful and sacred. The snow in the sky even condensed into flowers of its own accord, blossoming near her. All of that seemed to coordinate with soft chants of those mysterious women.

Qiu Honglei had become the sole main character of this world.

Zu An was now both the regent of the humans and the fiends. He had seen countless dances from the best dancers. But compared to this dance, they were nothing special at all. The only thing that could be comparable was the Bewitching Dance that Yun Jianyue danced. However, that dance was full of allure, while this dance was filled with a holy air. He was suddenly stunned, remembering that Qiu Honglei seemed to have received a miraculous encounter in the daoist secret dungeon and learned the Dance Offering to the Universe. Could this be it?

But could this beautiful dance really do anything to the powerful Lord of Slaughter?

Are you going to kill it with beauty?

Shopkeeper Paul looked up at the descending flowers. He looked a bit confused as he wondered, "There is actually someone in this world who can trigger a resonance with the world to this extent?"

"Wait, this dance..." he murmured as he suddenly thought of something. His expression suddenly changed. He quickly closed the door and looked as if he was going to run away.

Zu An panicked, asking, "Why are you leaving? You didn't even finish conducting business yet."

"It's all your fault for dillydallying! I'm not doing it anymore!" Shopkeeper Paul replied, waving his hands.

You even have this level of skill, so what are you even calling me out for? Are you just making fun of me?

He was scared that he would be left behind here if he was too slow. The dazzling pawn shop quickly began to collapse and shrink until it was just a

line. Then, with a flash, it disappeared. There were only the falling flowers left. Shop 58 was nowhere to be seen.

Zu An was speechless.

What the hell is wrong is wrong with that guy?

The Lord of Slaughter was alarmed as well. It was a powerful being itself, so it was able to gradually sense that some special changes were happening to this world. After connecting that to Shopkeeper Paul's frantic escape, it also realized that something wasn't right. It roared at Qiu Honglei, "Stop dancing!"

Then, it charged straight at her. When he saw that, Zu An was horrified and quickly stepped forward to stop it. If he let it get close to Qiu Honglei, it could just swallow her in a single gulp. However, his injuries were too serious. If he had to fight without evading and clash directly, he would be sent flying from the first collision. He watched as it charged at Qiu Honglei and was about to use his position swap skill to switch with her, but he didn't know if doing so would interrupt her dance.

Suddenly, the Snow Lady appeared in front of Qiu Honglei. Her hands formed seals, and a giant snow-white lotus bloomed in the sky. It perfectly surrounded the Lord of Slaughter.

The Lord of Slaughter that had been crashing around to and fro was now actually trapped by the white lotus. A layer of frost appeared over its entire body, and it seemed to be frozen.

"Don't get any closer. Your current self can't handle it," the Snow Lady hurriedly said, as if she was worried that Zu An could try to attack at that moment.

Zu An felt as if he had been struck by lightning. He looked at her without moving, murmuring, "The Pure World Icelotus? You're... Chuyan?"

That lotus was too familiar. He had been with Chuyan in the daoist secret dungeon and knew what she obtained from that experience. However,, he had never seen her use it.

The Snow Lady looked at him with a complicated expression, replying, "You finally recognize me?"

Zu An shivered. He reflexively shook his head and exclaimed, "No, that's impossible! Chuyan is cultivating in the White Jade Sect, so how could you possibly be her? Also, I even fought against you a long time ago. How could you be Chuyan?!"

A hint of broken-heartedness appeared on the Snow Lady's face. She muttered, "So I was still cultivating in seclusion at this time. If I think about the time, I've likely already entered that place..."

"What are you talking about?" Zu An asked, feeling as if he was about to go mad. He reflexively looked at Qiu Honglei in the hopes that that she would give him a bit of confidence, but she continued that holy dance as if she had already forgotten about everything else in this world.

The Snow Lady took a deep breath before saying, "Long story short, I am Chuyan from a different timeline."

Zu An was stunned.

Inside the Tai'e Sword, Mi Li had a pensive expression.

"We will meet again in the very distant past. Many things happened between us, and I ended up like this," the Snow Lady said, suddenly feeling a bit downcast. She asked, "Am I really ugly now? I've become a monster."

"You're not ugly! You're extremely beautiful," Zu An reflexively replied. But he quickly shook his head and said, "That's not what's most important! What happened? Why did you become like this? And what do you mean by saying that we'll meet again in the distant past?"

The Snow Lady shook her head and said, "There are many things I can't tell you. You have to experience it for yourself. Otherwise, we'll be killed by the laws of time."

Zu An was startled. Many guesses appeared in his mind. He was about to say something when the lotus flower next to him split open with a loud noise. The Lord of Slaughter jumped out from within.

"What a powerful lotus flower. I was almost frozen into an ice statue inside!" the Lord of Slaughter exclaimed, still feelingsome lingering fears. "Even so, your injuries are too severe and this lotus can't display its true strength. Let's see who can save you all now!"

Just then, Qiu Honglei finally finished her dance. Her final move was to kneel down on the ground, as if she was praying to the heavens. The world suddenly became quiet. It was different from the Great Snowy Mountain's quiet; this was a kind of absolute silence. Even the powerful Lord of Slaughter didn't dare to speak. It could only look around in fear. In the end, its eyes shifted toward the sky.

The clouds in the sky seemed to form a pair of eyes. Then, those eyes slowly opened. Everyone present felt a mysterious pressure that made their souls tremble. They all felt as if they were ants facing a great primordial beast. They couldn't even muster the slightest intent to resist.

Compared to Zu An, the Lord of Slaughter was in an even worse state. Perhaps because of its strength and its stronger spiritual senses, which made it feel things even more strongly, its entire body was shaking. In the end, it sprawled across the ground like a clump of noodles.

"Who... is calling me..." said a voice.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2082: Who Are You Prepared to Save?

It didn't seem to be a human voice, but rather more like the embodiment of the world's will. Some kind of supernatural being had descended upon this world.

The insufferably arrogant Lord of Slaughter was lying on the ground and shaking all over. It looked incredibly alarmed.

How could there be something this powerful? And it was summoned by a weak woman? This makes absolutely no sense!

Qiu Honglei looked up at the eyes in the sky. She bravely answered, "It was I who summoned you."

Those eyes looked at Qiu Honglei for a long time, then the voice said, "Hm... that's right. That dance was indeed quite stunning. It has already been a long time since I've seen anyone dance such a perfect Dance Offering to the Universe. What do you wish to ask of me?"

Qiu Honglei replied respectfully, "A powerful monster that doesn't belong to our world has invaded, and we couldn't eliminate it. I hope that your respected self can help us eliminate him and restore peace to this world."

When it heard those words, the Lord of Slaughter was immediately horrified.

This woman is truly vicious!

It couldn't be bothered with explaining and turned tail to run on the spot. It had only a single thought in its mind right now, which was to stay as far away from this terrifying being as possible. It was so fast, it moved like a bolt of lightning. It disappeared into a speck in the wind and snow in the blink of an eye.

Qiu Honglei was worried. If it managed to run away this time, everyone would still be dead if they encountered it again in the future!

The mysterious being said, "Oh, so it was this little thing. But it indeed isn't something your world could handle."

While the voice was speaking, the Lord of Slaughter suddenly appeared in front of the others. It was still running frantically with everything it had. They could see just how much effort it was making just from its bulging muscles. However, it didn't realize that even after running all this time, it had returned to its original location. From the perspective of Zu An and the others, it was running in place, but it had no awareness of that at all.

"Just how is it doing this?" Zu An exclaimed in horror. The sight before him was a bit outside of his realm of understanding, and he hadn't even seen that mysterious being doing anything, and yet the Lord of Slaughter had already been dragged back here.

Just then, something happened to the Lord of Slaughter's body. It was still running tirelessly, but the flesh on its body was already melting visibly. Zu An and the Snow Lady had attacked it countless times without even leaving a scratch. And yet now, some unknown power was actually making it melt like ice. The Lord of Slaughter's flesh soon melted away completely, leaving behind only a skeleton. It finally realized that something was off. It looked down at its body, then screamed. Then, its skeleton turned to ashes, and with a gust of wind, not even dregs remained.

Zu An was speechless. He was incredibly shocked. He had felt that he was already quite strong, that he had a fighting chance even against these foreign

monsters. Yet now, he realized that he was actually just a frog at the bottom of the well. So it turned out that the truly strong could reach this level!

The mysterious being in the air spoke up again. "Young lady, I find you rather pleasing. How about you follow me and become my servant? You can then dance for me frequently."

In his opinion, this was a tremendous opportunity and favor. There were countless beauties across countless empires across the worlds who would never even have such an opportunity, so this woman could just faint from excitement over this kindness.

But Qiu Honglei slowly shook her head and said, "I thank your distinguished self for your good intentions, but in this life of mine, I will only dance for one man."

Even though Zu An was really moved, he couldn't help but become a bit worried. He was about to say something when the mysterious being said with a light sigh, "Then that's a pity."

With his status and identity, he naturally wouldn't be shameless enough to ask again after being refused once. However, he said, "I've already responded to your favor. So according to the rules, you need to provide an offering. If you agreed to be my servant, I could have overlooked this, but it truly is a pity."

The voice was extremely calm, and it was gradually growing more distant. Those eyes slowly closed as well, and the gathered clouds scattered. That terrifying pressure was gone.

"That's it?" Zu An exclaimed, stunned. He quickly ran over to Qiu Honglei, as he wasn't sure what the offering that mysterious being spoke of meant.

When she saw him come over, Qiu Honglei smiled sweetly. It was the most beautiful smile Zu An had seen in his life, but also the most heart-shattering. That was because at almost the same time, Qiu Honglei's entire body began to erode away with the wind, her body gradually disappearing from this world.

"No!" Zu An cried. He wanted to hold her, but he didn't dare to touch her for fear that she would completely shatter and disappear.

Just then, streaks of cold radiance flew toward Qiu Honglei. A Pure World Icelotus suddenly bloomed around Qiu Honglei's body, wrapping her within.

Qiu Honglei's body that had been about to break down was suddenly frozen, forcibly stopping the process. It turned out that all this time, the Snow Lady had been preparing a secret skill, thus barely successfully preserving Qiu Honglei's last trace of life.

"Thank you..." Zu An said, feeling surprised and grateful. He was about to thank the Snow Lady when he was completely stunned. He discovered that even though Qiu Honglei's body's collapse had stopped, it was now/ the Snow Lady's body that began to break down.

"Ah Zu, don't feel broken-hearted. I asked her if she was willing to sacrifice her life for you, and she said that she was willing." The Snow Lady chuckled, saying, "If even these vixens are willing, how could I, your wife, not be willing? Who knows, she might have even been cursing me for trying to get rid of her earlier."

She naturally wouldn't selfishly make Qiu Honglei give up her life alone; rather, she had just wanted to test Honglei out. She had already prepared to take on the consequences of the dance from the very start. She just happened to know a secret technique that could redirect another person's karma toward herself.

Zu An walked up to the Snow Lady and opened his mouth. Normally, he was quite proud of his ability to talk, but now, he could only utter some inaudible syllables, unable to even form a complete sentence.

"Ah Zu, you don't need to feel sorry for me. Honglei might really die if she is ignored, but as long as the Great Snowy Mountain remains, I won't truly perish. I might just revive again after some time," the Snow Lady said, wiping away the tears on his face.

When he sensed that ice-cold touch, Zu An finally asked with difficulty, "How long?"

"Several thousand years, or maybe ten thousand years..." When she saw his expression of horror and despair, the Snow Lady smiled and said, "It's actually not that long. I've already waited for you on Great Snowy Mountain for nine thousand, five hundred and twenty seven years. It's not too big of a deal to wait another ten thousand years for you." Then, she moved closer and gave Zu An a light kiss.

Zu An immediately broke down into tears. He could tell that this was the Kiss of the Goddess, the same Kiss of the Goddess that only Chu Chuyan and Pei Mianman knew! That same Kiss of the Goddess was even different between Chu Chuyan and Pei Mianman. Pei Mianman was fiery and passionate, while Chu Chuyan was the kind that was reluctant at first, but still accepted in the end...

Even so, this kiss that was normally so wonderful was now just too bitter.

Zu An wanted to keep her here, but as soon as he touched her face, she scattered and disappeared into endless snowflakes. In that instant, he felt as if his soul had been ripped out of his body. He stood there in the wind and snow without moving at all.

He suddenly thought of something. He was about to speak when Mi Li appeared in front of him and said, "She was destroyed by laws that exceed your understanding. If you try to forcefully interfere with your current strength, even if you use Keyboard Come, you might follow in her footsteps as soon as you utter the first word."

Blood was about to come out from how hard Zu An was biting his lips. He asked, "Then should I just watch as she dies? I have to at least try!"

"Then what about Qiu Honglei?" Mi Li replied, pointing at the sealed Qiu Honglei. Her expression became mysteriously complicated as she continued, "Even if you don't want your own life and use Keyboard Come to save one person, with your current strength, you can only save a single person at most. Qiu Honglei or Chu Chuyan, who are you prepared to save?"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2083: Perish

Zu An had never expected that he would actually end up encountering this cliched problem of who to save. He really wanted to say that he would save them all. However, in the end, he couldn't say those words, because he knew that there was no way for him to save both of them at all.

Whether it was Qiu Honglei or Chu Chuyan, they were both lovers whom he would live and die together with. He had pledged his undying love to both of

them and loved them deeply. This was evident from how both of them were willing to give up their lives to save him after encountering a problem they couldn't deal with this time. How could he fail to live up to these women he loved so much?

Regardless of who he chose, it would imply the death of another. For the first time, he felt despair.

Screw it, I'll just save one for now and join the other in the afterlife. That way, she won't be all alone.

When she saw his expression change as if he had made his decision, Mi Li was frightened. She hoped that her questioning didn't make him suddenly lose his mind. She quickly said, "Stop dwelling on it already. Chu Chuyan has already turned into wind and snow, so you can't even save her anymore even if you want to. Also, it doesn't even seem as if she's truly died. In the future, once you have the ability to do so, you can try to figure out a way to save her then. In contrast, Qiu Honglei is on her last breath here. If you don't pay her any attention, she might really die."

Zu An trembled all over. A third party always saw the situation more clearly, after all. Just then, he had been completely crestfallen and his brain hadn't been working properly. Now that he was reminded by Mi Li, he quickly went over to Qiu Honglei's side to check her condition. She was preserved in the ice lotus, completely maintaining her appearance when she was 'alive'. There was still an expression of reluctance in her eyes as she looked at Zu An, because she knew that she was going to die.

"Chu Chuyan's Pure World Icelotus is indeed powerful. It can even freeze damage to this degree. But this process does nothing but slow down her death. As time goes on, she still won't be able to escape her end," Mi Li said, sighing.

Zu An suddenly thought of something. He took out the leftover Feather Mountain spring water and carefully poured it on top of the lotus. He had originally planned to drink all of it to recover his fighting strength as quickly as possible, but he'd decided to leave this amount for some reason. He hadn't expected it to be able to preserve Qiu Honglei's life.

When the spiritual spring water landed on the ice lotus, it quickly entered. Qiu Honglei's terrifyingly pale complexion became a bit rosier.

“Alright, with this Feather Mountain spring and the Pure World Icelotus’ protection, her life should be preserved for now. Once you’re strong enough or find a way to save her, you can then release her from the lotus,” Mi Li said; she had also been watching the process nervously. Now, she sighed in relief.

Zu An was stunned, asking, “I still can’t let her out even now?”

After all, Feather Mountain’s spring water could revive even the dead, and yet it only managed to barely keep her alive?

Mi Li rolled her eyes and replied, “Why don’t you think about what kind of being that one was? The fact that she could even keep her life is all because of the special method Chu Chuyan used, thus transferring away most of the damage. That’s the only reason why you even had a chance to use Feather Mountain’s spiritual spring in the first place and obtain this result. You should just count your blessings.”

Zu An asked seriously, “Who was that just now? Why was he so strong?” He had his fair share of experience, with many secret dungeons under his belt. He had seen all types of powerful beings too, but the pressure he had felt just now was unprecedented.

Mi Li’s expression became grave as she said, “He’s probably someone of the highest level across the universe’s various worlds. He might have even transcended the worlds.”

“You know him? You can’t say his name?” Zu An asked, recalling her saying that there were some beings whose names couldn’t be spoken.

Mi Li shook her head. “I don’t know him, but I was able to deduce all of this from what happened. As for his name, there’s no way I would know that.”

Zu An became quiet.

Mi Li concluded that the other person was someone at the very peak of the worlds, which means she’s seen similar things in the past. Otherwise, how could she be so certain?

Just these casually spoken words already told him many things, but he didn’t continue to ask about it. He knew that he was still too weak, and that by telling him, she would only be putting him in danger.

Either way, she won't do anything to harm me...

Even though he knew that he couldn't randomly trust people, if one didn't have even a single person they were willing to trust in this world, that would really be a bit too tragic.

"Do you think I'll have a chance to reach that level?" Zu An asked. He was someone who always had confidence, but what happened just now had delivered too great of a shock to him. Right now, he couldn't help but feel a bit lost.

"You definitely will," Mi Li said, now sounding particularly confident.

When he saw her intense gaze, Zu An also recovered his fighting spirit, saying, "That's right. I managed to reach my current state despite being a crippled loser in the past, so what do I have to be scared of?!"

"That's more like it," Mi Li said, a smile returning to her expression.

"Then how long do you think it'll take for me to get there? That way, I'll be able to save Honglei," Zu An quickly asked.

Mi Li's smile froze. She said, "Uh, I feel like for now, it'd be more practical for you to search for other methods."

Zu An was speechless.

Why did her expression change so much?

Mi Li gently touched the ice lotus with her hand and said, "There is definitely a way to save her across the worlds, but I've lost too many of my memories and can't think of them. That's why you need to slowly search for now, and I need time to recover my memories in the meantime."

"That's good to hear," Zu An said as he looked at Qiu Honglei inside the ice lotus.

No matter how difficult it is, I will definitely save her.

And also Chuyan...

"But there's another issue right now. Where should I put her?" Zu An asked.

As he looked at the ice lotus, he was a bit hesitant. With his current authority, he could find places whether it was the fiend or human side. But if he didn't personally watch over her, he was just worried that something would happen. If he left her with the Devil Sect, Yun Jianyue would naturally be trustworthy. Even so, she was a sect master and couldn't constantly watch over her every second. Besides, the Devil Sect was a place where all sorts of crooks lived. If something bad happened, it'd be too late for regrets.

"Isn't that easy enough? Just put her in that bead of yours," Mi Li said, not seeming worried at all.

Zu An frowned, saying, "The Brilliant Glass Bead can't store living creatures..."

"Did you forget about that jade container you took when you were searching for Lord Sui's Pearl?" Mi Li suddenly asked.

Zu An nodded. Back then, Lord Sui's Pearl seemed to have had a close connection with the Medusa Race. The jade coffin was invulnerable to any sword attacks and seemed a bit special, so he'd taken it.

"That jade coffin is actually something really good. It can preserve someone inside for ten thousand years without decay. Store Qiu Honglei inside, and then you'll be able to store her inside that bead," Mi Li explained.

"Really?" Zu An asked hesitantly. After all, this was no joke. If he made a mistake, Qiu Honglei could just die on the spot.

"When have I ever lied to you?" Mi Li replied with a frown. But she knew that he really cared about his lover, so she suppressed her impatience and explained, "That jade coffin has a space of its own inside. To a certain degree, you can view it as a cosmos flying ship. Didn't you used to always talk about some nine dragons pulling a coffin? If I am not mistaken, that coffin should be a cosmos ship."

Zu An was speechless. He had never expected her to still remember the random s he talked about, let alone the fact that this jade coffin was actually so amazing.

He quickly took out the jade coffin. Its entire body was sparkling and transparent, and there was an extraordinary light flowing around it. He carefully placed Qiu Honglei into the jade coffin. He gave her a light kiss on

the forehead, saying, "Honglei, don't worry. I'll definitely do my best to save you as soon as possible."

When he looked at those beautiful eyes, he couldn't help but ask Mi Li, "Will she be lonely or scared if she's locked up in this pitch-black space?"

"You're overthinking it," Mi Li said in annoyance. "She's currently in a state between life and death. Time is already meaningless to her. In other words, she's unconscious. Even if you forgot about her in this jade coffin and left her until the end of time, she wouldn't feel a thing."

Zu An was speechless. Even so, her words still brought him a bit of relief. Then, he stored the jade coffin back into the Brilliant Glass Bead. A few seconds later, he took her out again to check if she was still okay. Only then did he store the jade coffin away again.

Mi Li rolled her eyes and asked, "Did you really think I was lying to you? Rather than paying attention to these trivialities, you should start thinking about the current situation."

"What situation?" Zu An asked. As soon as he spoke, however, he suddenly felt the world surge up and down like an ocean wave, as if the entire Great Snowy Mountain Range was about to be destroyed.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2084: Unable to Live, Unable to Die

Zu An was shocked. He still clearly remembered Chu Chuyan saying that as long as the Great Snowy Mountain remained, she wouldn't truly die. But now, everything was starting to crack and collapse. The Great Snowy Mountain Range itself seemed to really be in danger.

"Just what is going on?" Zu An quickly asked Mi Li.

"It's probably because that being just now was too strong and this world is struggling to bear its power, causing some problems with this space. Earlier, didn't the Lord of Slaughter come out from beneath the Great Snowy Mountain? There were probably already issues with the seal then. Factoring in

all of those elements, it seems that the seal has completely collapsed,” Mi Li said after looking around.

Zu An followed her gaze and saw pitch-black cracks appear in space. At first, it was just a single one, but he could clearly sense that the rupture was growing bigger and bigger. Soon after, monsters started forcing their way out. In just a few seconds, there were nearly ten thousand monsters storming into the world. Judging from how the cracks were growing bigger and bigger, that number would only continue to grow exponentially.

There were even some massive bodies that were trying to force their way over from the space behind the crack, and every single one was clearly an incredibly powerful being. If they were allowed to descend, the whole world would definitely be in enormous trouble.

As he watched events unfold, Zu An felt a sense of powerlessness. He had worked so hard for so long, but was all of it for nothing? If he had been at his strongest, he could eliminate the monsters that had just entered. But after fighting huge battles again and again, the people at his side had either died or fallen into eternal unconsciousness. He was in a terrible state himself and didn't have much strength left.

“You've already done everything you could. This isn't your fault. You should first pick up that blade, and take some time to recover. You can think about all of this after you've restored your condition,” Mi Li said. She was worried that after losing his lover, Zu An do something impulsive. She wanted him to fully heal and deal with the situation again once he made a full recovery.

Zu An didn't say anything. However, his eyes still followed Mi Li's line of sight and he saw a blade stabbed into the ground. That was the place where the Lord of Slaughter had been 'brought away'. When it met power at that level, even something as powerful as that monster had turned to ashes, only leaving behind this blade.

When he walked over, Zu An finally saw that it wasn't a blade, but rather a tooth. Since it was too large, its shape looked like a blade. It shone with a cold glint, and was sharp and sturdy. There wouldn't be much issue in using it as a blade. The fact that it remained even now proved that it was clearly special.

Mi Li floated over to him. While looking at the blade, she said, “Anything that could survive under that level of power is definitely of extraordinary grade. It

seems like something that the Lord of Slaughter was only able to refine through a miraculous encounter.”

Zu An held the tooth in his hand. The surface was extremely smooth and didn't give off any smell. When he brandished it, it was as easy to use as a proper weapon.

“You can forge weapons, right? Once you return, you can make it into a real blade. I can sense some kind of special energy within it. Who knows, the fact that the Lord of Slaughter could ignore the influence of various magical laws might just be because of this tooth,” Mi Li said, her eyes sparkling.

Zu An was startled. The reason why the Lord of Slaughter had been so hard to deal with was because it had that immunity to magical laws. If this ‘blade’ had that ability too, it would become much easier for him to deal with various situations.

“Since you've already obtained something good, you should hurry and leave this place. Once you recover, you can gather the humans and fiends to deal with these foreign monsters,” Mi Li urged.

However, Zu An didn't move. He looked at the monsters that swarmed out and the crumbling snowy landscape, creating a scene that was like the end of the world. He said, “I can't leave.”

If the Great Snowy Mountain Range was destroyed, then Chuyan would truly die.

“But you can't stop them at all! That is, unless you use Keyboard Come, but if you do that, you'll turn into ashes. There are still so many people waiting for you. Qiu Honglei is also waiting for you to save her!” Mi Li exclaimed, starting to panic.

This kid isn't really going to be stupid enough to sacrifice himself, right?

“That may not be. That blade reminded me that I still have something else,” Zu An said, then took out the Skycloud Sword from the Brilliant Glass Bead. He began to use the summoning method just as he had been previously taught.

Soon after, clear smoke surged all around him. Shi Bingxiu appeared nearby along with the other departed spirits.

Zu An pointed at the monsters that covered everything and spoke gravely. "Don't you all wish to atone for your crimes? Your chance has come. Kill all of these monsters and save the world!"

Shi Bingxiu looked at all the monsters and said, "There are so many..."

Zu An remained silent. As time went on, there would only be more and more monsters. To be honest, he wasn't too optimistic about Shi Bingxiu and his soldiers. Even though they had quite a few numbers, compared to these monsters, they wouldn't be able to do too much. Even so, he believed in the Imperial Gate Bei Qing behind them. Even though he had only met her briefly and she spoke in riddles, since she had set up all of this in the distant past, there was definitely a purpose for it.

"Are you all scared? Do you want to run away again?" Zu An asked coldly. He was worried that they were too scared, so he could only try to spur them on with taunts.

"I am indeed a bit scared," Shi Bingxiu said, chuckling in embarrassment. The surrounding soldiers also had awkward expressions.

Zu An was disappointed.

As expected, a leopard can't change its spots. These deserters aren't reliable.

Suddenly, Shi Bingxiu asked, "If I help you kill these monsters, can you really set us free?"

Zu An was a bit hesitant. To be honest, he didn't know why Imperial Gate Bei Qing had spoken like that, and she hadn't taught him how to set these departed spirits free. However, he suddenly remembered something and replied seriously, "I can!"

When they saw him hesitate, Shi Bingxiu and the others were a bit disappointed, but when they heard his reply, all of them cried out in excitement.

"Brothers, do you all still wish to continue on like this in these forms that are neither dead nor alive?!" Shi Bingxiu suddenly shouted toward his soldiers.

"We don't!" the departed spirits all roared, their voices making the entire place shake a bit. Even the noisy monsters in the distance briefly fell silent.

To a certain degree, their current state could be considered immortality, but they couldn't leave the range of the Skycloud Sword, nor could they enjoy the pleasures of the world. Their five senses seemed to have been stolen. Living on like this was nothing more than a form of eternal suffering. They all wanted to end things. Even if they couldn't enter the cycle of reincarnation, a complete end was also a kind of freedom.

Shi Bingxiu gave Zu An a deep look and said, "I hope you aren't lying to us, or else our ghosts will haunt you for eternity!"

"Don't worry, I'm only interested in women. I have no intention of bickering with you all for eternity," Zu An calmly said.

When he heard the rather rude reply, Shi Bingxiu just laughed and said, "Brothers, follow me!"

The departed spirits were full of fighting spirit as they charged at the endless monsters.

When they saw that, the monsters were stunned, but they soon broke out into laughter, as if they were mocking the soldiers for overestimating themselves. After all, in terms of numbers, these departed spirits didn't have the advantage. They likely hadn't been all that powerful when they were alive either. Judging from their appearances, if they had been here in life, they would be nothing more than food for the monsters. And yet, a mere pile of food wanted to go against their fate?

Many monsters bared their fangs and pounced on the departed spirits. Meanwhile, Zu An watched the battle nervously. He had to admit that Shi Bingxiu was an outstanding general, who didn't blindly order his subordinates to attack at full force. Instead, he surrounded the enemy with all kinds of formations, then attacked the monsters from more favorable positions.

At first, it was pretty effective. Many monsters were surrounded and killed like that. However, the monsters weren't stupid either. They quickly realized what was happening and began to surround the soldiers instead. Thus, their power and numerical advantage was revealed. The departed spirits didn't just fail to eliminate the monsters they surrounded; they were soon the ones being attacked instead. Soon after, the soldiers were eliminated one after another, and Shi Bingxiu's formation was completely scattered by the monsters.

Zu An felt a wave of gloominess fill him.

As expected, it seems this won't work.

Shockingly, however, the departed spirit army suddenly reappeared out of thin air. They continued to follow orders and attack. Zu An's memory was now extremely sharp, so he quickly recognized quite a few familiar faces. These were all departed spirits that had already 'died'! He finally understood the spirits' endless suffering. Even if they were killed, they would still be revived and suffer eternal torment. No wonder they had all been driven mad one after another! The rebel army broke free and fought valiantly.

...

After a long time passed, Shi Bingxiu's army had already been wiped out countless times, and yet they always revived and rejoin the fight.

After seeing their powerful companions die one after another, the monsters were starting to grow apprehensive. Even though they were much stronger than these departed spirits, they couldn't withstand the other side's endless revivals! If this continued, they would just be slowly whittled away!

Countless monster corpses were strewn everywhere. The remaining monsters panicked and fled back toward the void crack. Even the monsters behind the cracks stopped and didn't come out. If they continued to just fight like this, they would all eventually die! Thus, they planned to observe the situation first.

When Zu An saw that almost all of the monsters had fled back into the void crack, and that apart from the monster corpses, there were no others, he started to doubt his own eyes.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2085: Compensation

Shi Bingxiu moved over to Zu An's side and said, "We've already pushed back the monsters according to our agreement. It's time for you to fulfill your promise."

When he saw the departed spirits stare at him with fiery gazes, Zu An wondered whether they would rip him to pieces if he said he couldn't do it. He looked up at the crack. The monsters were currently looking through the

cracks as well. If the departed soldiers disappeared, they would then immediately charge over.

Even so, it wasn't realistic to demand that these departed spirits run into the crack to chase after the monsters. Zu An remained quiet for a moment before quickly saying, "Wait for a bit until I deal with these monsters first."

Shi Bingxiu was a bit doubtful, asking, "How will you deal with them?"

From his perspective, this situation was already far from something human power could resolve.

Zu An quickly thought about how to deal with the crack in the sky that was growing larger and larger. He did know some monster-sealing formations, but they could only be used on a smaller scale. They would naturally be useless against something of this size. However, when he thought about monster-sealing formations, he suddenly recalled something.

He took out the jade coffin. When he opened it, he saw that Qiu Honglei was still lying inside calmly like a statue. However, Zu An hadn't brought the coffin out for her sake; instead, he removed an elegant and refined ancient talisman from within.

At first, he'd been a bit worried when Mi Li suggested to store Qiu Honglei in the jade coffin, because it was also the place where Jing Teng was sleeping. Even so, the jade coffin was big enough to fit them both, so he had opened it up anyway. But then, he'd discovered that Jing Teng had actually turned into a talisman. It seemed that returning to her original form would make it easier for her to recover.

When he saw the delicate talisman, Zu An's expression changed greatly. After all, the two of them had shared the most intimate kind of relationship...

As if sensing the movement, the talisman moved. Then, a clear light floated out and drifted through the air. The talisman turned into Jing Teng. She opened her eyes drowsily. When she saw Zu An, she exclaimed with a huge smile, "Oh! Is it time for treatment? I thought you'd forgotten about me. Come over here." She enthusiastically grabbed Zu An's arm while speaking.

When he saw the beautiful Jing Teng act playfully around Zu An, as if she was asking for permission to do it right then and there, Shi Bingxiu's eyes widened.

This kid is really, really lucky! Sigh, that's what the joys of living should look like!

Mi Li had an ambiguous smile. She naturally knew what the so-called treatment was.

Zu An was really embarrassed when he sensed their strange looks. He looked at Jing Teng's legs.

Black leggings? So it's Dark Jing Teng. No wonder she's so enthusiastic.

He quickly said, "There's a serious problem right now..."

He then gave a rough explanation of the spatial crack in the distance. "An ancient seal was broken and the foreign monsters are trying to invade this world. I want to repair the seal. Do you have any ideas?"

Jing Teng had previously sealed countless powerful beings within a great tomb, and that seal was far superior to this one. She would be a good specialist to talk about the subject with.

Dark Jing Teng immediately sneered and said, "I thought you missed me, but you actually called me out because you needed me for something."

Zu An could only pamper her by saying, "Come on, I really did miss you, but as of late, I've kept encountering these events that are trying to destroy the world and haven't had any free time at all."

"Hah, keep up the act. Do you think I'm that easy to fool?" Dark Jing Teng sneered.

Zu An was getting a bit of a headache. Dark Jing Teng had once been the Ghost King. She'd had a bunch of strong individuals under her, so she was definitely not that easily swayed. He could only reply, "What can hair be attached to if there's no skin? Once I save this world, I'll compensate you properly, okay?"

When she heard him emphasize the word 'compensate', Dark Jing Teng seemed to realize something and her face reddened. She harrumphed and said, "For all I care, this world can just be destroyed then. With your current ability, we can just go to another world."

Zu An frowned and said, "I have many friends and loved ones in this world, and even if they weren't here, I wouldn't be able to just watch as a world was destroyed by monsters just like that."

"Hmph, what are you getting all serious for? I finally got a chance to come out, and yet it wasn't for romance, but rather these kinds of annoying things that ruin the mood. If you're so awesome, why don't you go and save the world yourself?" Dark Jing Teng retorted. Having been the Ghost King, how could she tolerate this kind of disappointment? The two quickly reached a standstill.

Mi Li suddenly said, "Ah Zu, there's such a huge hole in the sky right now. Having a little girl like her help you might be troubling her too much, right? How about we ask her older sister and see if she has any solutions?"

"Who said I was only acting like this because I don't have a solution?" Dark Jing Teng exclaimed, immediately getting provoked. She glared at Mi Li. "And who is this auntie here? Go away and stop causing trouble around Ah Zu."

Mi Li narrowed her eyes, her gaze immediately becoming unpleasant. Dark Jing Teng didn't back down and stared right back at her.

Zu An could only introduce her by saying, "She's my master."

Dark Jing Teng's expression grew rigid, but then she immediately said with a sweet smile, "So it was master; why didn't you tell me earlier? And here I was thinking it was just another seductive slut who lusted after Ah Zu's body. Please don't take any offense. master; I'll pour tea for you as an apology." She took out a cup of tea that came from who knew where to hand over to Mi Li.

Mi Li had an ambiguous smile as she remarked, "That means that you really do have a solution, yes?"

"Are you joking with me right now? I single-handedly suppressed beings that were indescribably powerful throughout the ages. There's no way I wouldn't know how to fix such a trifling seal," Dark Jing Teng said proudly.

As he watched her arrogant behavior, Zu An started to feel a bit vexed. He said, "If I had known this earlier, I would've called you out sooner."

If he'd done that, perhaps Chu Chuyan and Qiu Honglei wouldn't have ended up in their current state.

"It's the perfect timing now," Dark Jing Teng said, suddenly feeling guilty. She'd actually just been talking big for most of what she just said. In her current state, even if she'd come out earlier, she wouldn't have been able to do much. In order to hide her embarrassment, she quickly said, "Judging from the current circumstances, it seems the seal has just broken. There's still a way to fix it, but we need the articles used to bear the burden of the seal. For example, just like me and my big sister, a seal needs a vital formation eye or divine artifact. If we can't find it, there's nothing I can do."

Zu An was startled. He took out the Skycloud Sword and asked, "Is this enough?"

Dark Jing Teng moved her fingers gently over the surface, saying, "Hm? This does have a connection with the seal, but its power alone seemingly isn't enough. It's still missing something else."

"Wait for a moment!" Zu An replied, closing his eyes. He sensed the positions of the other two snowy mountains and reached out his hand, calling out, "Come!"

Two streaks of light quickly flew in his direction. They were none other than the Ninefoot Mirror and the Soul Capturing Jade!

As it turned out, when the powerful being appeared, causing the changes that had taken place, the seal loosened up. The two artifacts had also been shaken out of the snowy mountains. These divine artifacts resonated with each other, which was why they were so easily summoned over.

Dark Jing Teng looked at the three divine artifacts in her hand and said, "Alright, it feels complete now."

With a wave of her hand, the three divine artifacts floated around them. Then, her hands formed all sorts of complicated seals. Streaks of light scattered into the surrounding space, gradually forming lines that were faintly visible in the air. They vaguely made out the outline of a giant formation. Meanwhile, the three divine artifacts flew to three different locations to supply the formation with an unending stream of power.

The monsters that had just been watching the situation noticed that something wasn't right. They screamed, "Hurry and stop that woman! She's repairing the seal!" The monsters could no longer hold themselves back and charged at Jing Teng.

Zu An looked at Shi Bingxiu and said, "I'll leave it to you."

Shi Bingxiu felt a wave of resentment build up inside.

Screw you! You're enjoying your time with girls, and yet we're the ones who have to fight to the death?

Do I have to help you push your butt later too?

But with how things stood, he didn't dare to argue back. He only stared at Zu An and said, "If you go back on your promise, I'll make sure that you won't have a pleasant death."

You have successfully trolled Shi Bingxiu for +444 +444 +444...

Then, he summoned his subordinates and once again charged forward to stop the incoming monsters.

...

A while later, Dark Jing Teng finally finished what she was doing. Then, she shouted, "Seal!"

The faintly discernible lines in the sky immediately shone with brilliance. A large-scale formation appeared in the air. The three artifacts each went to three different formations, forming a giant 'seal' character when combined!

Immediately after, the formation quickly moved toward the giant crack in the air. The monsters behind the crack were all stirred up. They all struggled to rush through. Soon after, a massive claw reached out from within. The pressure immediately felt as if a great primordial beast had appeared in this world.

Zu An's expression changed a bit. He looked at the crack nervously. This kind of presence was incomparable to the Lord of Slaughter, but it wasn't far off. If it really crossed over, there wouldn't be anyone who could face it.

The massive claw tore at the sides of the spatial crack, and sure enough, it opened up a bit. Even a massive, powerfully-built figure became faintly visible. However, the giant 'seal' character appeared on the spatial crack once again, causing it to close at a visible rate. In response, even more claws reached out

from inside the crack. Because of the two competing forces, the crack alternately widened and narrowed.

Dark Jing Teng harrumphed. She used another magical skill, and a beam of light fired onto the formation. The three divine artifacts suddenly glowed brightly, and the formation became twice as bright as before. Countless furious and unwilling roars resounded from behind the crack, as the monsters could no longer stop the spatial crack from closing. In roughly the time it took for an incense stick to burn, the sky returned to how it had been before. Everything became calm once more.

Zu An and the others were naturally really happy to see the blue sky and white clouds again. The monsters that had crossed over screamed in despair. They all flew into the air to try and reopen the gateway.

Shi Bingxiu didn't let such a great chance go. He led the departed spirits in a one-sided slaughter, killing all of the monsters that crossed over.

"Thank you," Zu An said as he moved over to Jing Teng's side excitedly.

Jing Teng was about to say something, but her complexion was extremely pale. She couldn't help but faint in his arms. Her final words before fainting were, "I really lost a lot this time. You have to keep me company for ten days. No, a whole month, every single day!"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2086: It's All for Saving Lives

Chapter 2086: It's All for Saving Lives

Shi Bingxiu was about to return and ask Zu An to fulfill their agreement when he saw the scene unfold. He and the soldiers looked at Zu An with incredible shock. Even though they had been departed spirits for a long time, they still had an appreciation for human aesthetics. They could naturally recognize Jing Teng's astonishing beauty and voluptuous figure. Even in life, this was a goddess-level figure they could never have hoped to attain. And yet a woman like that was actually being so proactive with Zu An?

Zu An had never expected Jing Teng to be this direct. He could only look awkwardly at Mi Li.

Mi Li remarked with an unhappy expression, "What are you looking at me for? She's still waiting for you to compensate her for her loss."

Zu An almost choked on the spot. He quickly sent some natural ki into Jing Teng's body so her complexion wouldn't be so pale anymore. It seemed that repairing the broken seal had cost her quite heavily.

Shi Bingxiu really couldn't keep watching this anymore. He and his men had already been dead for so long, and yet he still had to watch this damned public display of affection. He coughed lightly and said, "We've helped you defeat the monsters and repair the seal. Shouldn't it be time for your respected self to fulfill your promise?"

After he said that, the spirits stared at Zu An. If he dared to say that he couldn't, they would immediately rip him to shreds.

Zu An set Jing Teng down off to the side first. Then, he cupped his hands toward Shi Bingxiu and the others, saying, "Thank you for bravely killing the enemy and saving this world, everyone."

Shi Bingxiu chuckled, saying, "I guess we didn't cower this time... Hold on, stop trying to curry favor with us. Can you save us, or can you not?"

"I can," Zu An said, not delaying any longer. Instead, he used the Primordial Origin Sutra, and with its purification skill, chanted, "Dust to dust, earth to earth. What should not remain should cease to exist..."

He was now more and more curious about Imperial Gate Bei Qing.

Just how did she know that I would definitely obtain this Skycloud Sword, and how did she know that the one with the Skycloud Sword would just happen to be able to purify these departed spirits?

On top of that, judging from how she spoke, it almost seemed as if she knew me.

A clear gust of wind blew over them, and streaks of blue light flickered in the air. Some illusory figures appeared, and one after another, the departed spirits began to disappear like dust. When they saw that, the soldiers didn't feel fear.

Instead, there was a serene smile on their faces. Perhaps death was really scary for others, but for them, it was something they had long sought but could never obtain.

When he saw that his own body was also disappearing, a rare smile appeared on Shi Bingxiu's face. He said, "It turns out the feeling of not being deserters, but rather heroes, is quite good..." Afterward, he also completely disappeared from this world.

Zu An thought to himself, *If things were going to end up like this anyway, why did you decide to do what you did?* And yet, in the end, he didn't say those words. After all, the soldiers had been tremendously helpful in fighting back the monsters.

Mi Li said, "Now that the danger has passed, it's time for me to return to sleep. Sigh, I wonder if my appearance drew the attention of those guys this time."

"Are those guys stronger than the Shadow Monster King and the Lord of Slaughter?" Zu An couldn't help but ask.

"Those two aren't even fit to wipe their shoes," Mi Li said in disdain.

"Then what about the one who appeared after the Dance Offering to the Universe?" Zu An asked.

Mi Li hesitated before replying, "That's hard to say."

Zu An was stunned. If even she was saying that, then even if they weren't as strong as that being, they were probably not far off.

As expected, both immediate and long-term priorities have to be paid close attention to...

"You should rest properly in the meantime. I'll seriously think about how to make you stronger, and how to save that little lover of yours," Mi Li said with a grave expression. The things that had just happened made her really nervous too.

"Thank you, master!" Zu An said sincerely.

“Hmph, you’ve finally addressed me properly for the first time because of that little lover of yours,” Mi Li said, chuckling and waving her hand. Then, she returned to the Tai’e Sword.

Zu An looked at Qiu Honglei inside the jade coffin, and then at the Great Snowy Mountain. He felt as if he was looking at Chu Chuyan’s cold and pure appearance. He said resolutely, “I’ll definitely save you both!”

He then went over to Jing Teng’s side. He was about to return her to the jade coffin, but she just happened to wake up. She quickly said, “I don’t want to go back to the coffin! I’m tired of just lying there. I want to get some fresh air! Also, now that you’ve thrown a chunk of ice in there, I’m about to freeze to death!”

Dark Jing Teng immediately began to chatter continuously.

Zu An looked at her slender legs and the black leggings covering them. He said in annoyance, “Of course it’ll be cold if you only wear that much.”

“Hmph, with my cultivation, I normally don’t get cold at all. Even if I didn’t wear a thing, I wouldn’t feel cold. But this ice you dragged in there is a bit different, and it even makes me feel a bit cold.” Dark Jing Teng harrumphed.

When he thought about how this was Chu Chuyan’s Pure World Icelotus, Zu An couldn’t help but feel a bit broken-hearted.

“Hey, it ended up costing me a lot to help you, you know? It’s almost as if I rested all that time for nothing. Hurry up and compensate me!” Dark Jing Teng cried. As she spoke, she couldn’t help but purse her lips, her expression turning both alluring and enticing.

Zu An said with lacking interest, “Let’s wait for a little bit. I can’t get into the mood right now.”

Dark Jing Teng was stunned, replying, “There’s no way, right? Your body was ridiculously tough last time. There’s no way you could have become weak so quickly! Could it be that humans age that fast? Wait, could it be that some vixen already sucked you dry?”

Zu An became a bit unhappy as he said, “I just lost two loved ones one after another, so do you think I’m in the mood to talk about these things?”

Dark Jing Teng looked at Qiu Honglei in the jade coffin before saying, "Oh, so it was that woman in the tomb last time. Who is the other one? Hm? She has the Pure World Icelotus intent around her. Is it that blue and white-clad one, the one with the Kiss of the Goddess?" Previously, those two women had ruined her plans, so she still had a deep impression of them.

Zu An voiced his confirmation.

Dark Jing Teng grinned.

Hmph, I hope all of those vixens disappear.

However, when she saw Zu An's unhappy expression, she wasn't stupid either and didn't show it. Instead, she pretended to be hurt and said, "That's a huge pity then."

"Your act would be more convincing if you weren't smiling," Zu An said, promptly exposing her in annoyance.

Dark Jing Teng decided to just not pretend anymore, saying, "Hmph, I'm not even close to her, and she almost ruined everything last time. I'm already being respectful by not clapping and celebrating."

"You...!" Zu An was a bit angry, but when he saw her stare at him stubbornly, he sighed and said, "Forget it."

He also knew that Dark Jing Teng was rather unreasonable in nature, and she had been a villain to begin with. The way she thought was very different from that of an ordinary person. Besides, it was because of her great help that the world had been saved, so he naturally couldn't criticize her.

When she saw him act all discouraged, Dark Jing Teng carefully asked, "Will you not be close to me anymore in the future because of this?"

Zu An was speechless.

This woman really is quite the prodigy, isn't she?

When she saw that he didn't say anything, Dark Jing Teng immediately panicked. "You can't just abandon me when times become hard! In the worst case, I'll just help you think of a way to save them, okay?"

“Don’t misuse idioms,” Zu An said with a scowl. “When did I say that I was going to abandon you? And also, what ways are there to save them?”

Dark Jing Teng propped up her chin with her hand and said, “I can vaguely remember that there's a way to save them in this kind of situation, but I've lived for so long that I've lost a lot of my memories. I can't think of it right now.”

Zu An grabbed her excitedly and said, “You have to remember it!”

Sigh, they remain young and beautiful after living for thousands or even tens of thousands of years, but the biggest issue is that their memories aren't great. Mi Li is like this, and she's also like this.

Dark Jing Teng's eyes swirled with brilliance. She said, “But right now, my fundamental power is really exhausted. If you help me replenish it and I recover more, I might be able to remember.”

Zu An was speechless. He almost laughed out of anger. This woman always managed to circle back to that subject somehow.

“Let's leave this place first,” he said. Even though he was in a rush to save his lovers, he wouldn't do something like that in this kind of place.

When she heard his tone loosen up, Dark Jing Teng smiled. She didn't return to the jade coffin, and instead decided to just travel with Zu An.

...

There was only the snowy mountain range all around them, but Dark Jing Teng was still full of interest and excitement. Along the way, she chattered continuously with Zu An and always asked questions that were beyond obvious to normal people.

At first, Zu An was annoyed, but later, he realized that she'd had to keep the monsters in the great tomb suppressed for a seemingly endless amount of time. After becoming her own person, she'd lived in the dark Ghost Realm, so she probably hadn't gotten many opportunities to see the outside world. He couldn't help but develop a sense of pity for her. As he answered her questions, his tone became gentler.

When she sensed the change, Dark Jing Teng intimately held his hand. Her body even naturally stuck to him.

Soon after, a wave of smoke and dust suddenly stirred in the distance. A group of mounted riders on all kinds of strange beasts rushed over. A few moments later, they arrived. The one in front was incredibly charming, and her expression carried the delicate and helpless air of a widow. Who else could it be but the Second Empress?

Meanwhile, behind her were many of the Fiend races' experts. Just then, they also saw Zu An and looks of excitement broke out on their faces. They were about to call out when they suddenly saw Jing Teng sticking to him. All of their words stopped in their throats. From time to time, their eyes darted over to the Second Empress. They had all kinds of expressions on their faces.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2087: Spectators Don't Fear Drama

When she first saw Zu An, the Second Empress was about to jump into his arms, but when she saw Jing Teng, she stopped rigidly in place.

Who is that bitch? She looks as if she really wants to just throw herself into Ah Zu's arms. Is she in heat? Look at how shameless she's being in broad daylight, the Second Empress thought to herself in irritation. She completely forgot that she had previously also jumped right into Zu An's arms in front of all of the Fiend soldiers.

The expressions of those very same soldiers immediately became varied and colorful.

Where did this woman come from? She's so beautiful that she doesn't even seem inferior to the Second Empress!

After all, the Second Empress' beauty was something that the Fiend races all publicly acknowledged to be without faults. That charming style of hers in particular, as well as her unique widow's charm, left countless individuals bewitched. And yet, they had never expected to see a young lady who rivaled her in beauty!

Many people's eyes shifted toward Jing Teng's long, slender, black-stockings-covered legs as they thought, *This really is damned attractive. We have to make our own wives try them on once we get home.*

Zu An was a bit surprised to see them, exclaiming, “Hm? Why did you all come here?”

The Second Empress looked at him for a while before explaining, “We were resting and reorganizing in Mengte City, but we discovered that an intense battle was taking place here not too long ago, and that the world itself was changing. I was worried about your safety, so I brought reinforcements over. What is the current situation like? Are you hurt?”

When he sensed her concern, Zu An felt warm inside. He said, “Thank you for coming to help, everyone, but the issue has already been solved.”

“Just what happened? Hurry and tell us!” the Second Empress exclaimed, stunned.

Everyone else found it inconceivable too. The disturbance just then had felt like the end of the world. They had even prepared to die in battle, and yet Zu An was now saying that it was all taken care of? Even though they all understood his strength, the sounds and rumbles of battle were just too terrifying. It really was hard for them to believe that he had taken care of it all on his own.

“It’ll take a while to explain everything...” Zu An said, feeling a bit sad when he recalled what happened to Chu Chuyan and Qiu Honglei.

“Then let’s go back and slowly talk along the way,” the Second Empress said. Even though she was also shocked, she trusted that he wouldn’t joke around about something that serious. As such, she ordered the army to return. At the same time, she had people bring over two beasts for Zu An and Jing Teng to ride on.

Even though she wanted to ride together with Zu An, she still cared about face in the end. After all, she was still the Fiend races’ Second Empress, and it hadn’t been too long since she became a widow. She had already been very intimate with Zu An not too long ago, but that could be explained as excitement after the calamity. If she continued to flirt with him in front of her subordinates’ faces, it really would tarnish her national prestige.

Suddenly, her eyes widened, because the ridiculously beautiful woman accompanying Zu An didn’t ride on the beast they had prepared for her, but jumped straight into Zu An’s arms to ride together with him instead.

“I don’t want to be separated from you,” Jing Teng said as she rubbed her cheek intimately against Zu An’s chest, as if she was saying something that couldn’t be more obvious.

The Second Empress’ brows twitched. As far as she could tell, this woman was full of schemes, and had to be deliberately showing off in front of her!

As they looked at the three, the other higher-ups of the Fiend races had strange expressions. Their expressions were all between laughter and tears. Why did they suddenly feel as if the Second Empress was being NTR’d by another woman?

Normally, who in this world could even receive the favor of someone as stunning as the Second Empress? Even if they could, they would be too scared of hurting her in the slightest. Who would be willing to make her feel broken-hearted or jealous? Only the regent was capable of something like that, and the women he found weren’t inferior to the Second Empress at all.

Tsk tsk, the regent really is a role model for our generation. We’ll have to have my clansmen ask the regent for tips once we get back!

When he saw people's expressions, Zu An was a bit embarrassed. He wanted to push Jing Teng away, but she only hugged him even tighter. When he gave her pale complexion a look, he knew that she was really weak right now and his heart softened, so he didn’t refuse her again.

When the Second Empress saw that Zu An tacitly allowed such a thing to happen, anger burned in her eyes.

They’re fighting, they’re definitely fighting... the authoritative figures of the Fiend races thought, clenching their fists as they felt the sparks in the air. They looked at the two women excitedly. Either way, they knew they would never be able to obtain either woman, so they didn’t mind watching an interesting drama.

Unfortunately, things didn’t develop as they anticipated. The Second Empress asked with a big smile, “Regent, who is this young lady here? Are you not going to introduce her to us?”

You have successfully trolled the Second Empress for +233 +233 +233...

Zu An finally reacted and said, "This is Miss Jing Teng; this is the Second Empress..."

Jing Teng was a bit surprised when she learned about the other person's identity. She exclaimed, "Oh! You're actually the empress dowager?" She hadn't expected such a young and beautiful woman to actually already be the empress dowager! She'd previously thought that empress dowagers were all old grandma-like people.

The Second Empress narrowed her eyes.

What is the meaning of this? Is she making fun of me for being old?

Zu An sensed that the mood was off and immediately said, "By the way, it was thanks to Jing Teng that we were able to repair that seal." Then, he told them about how Jing Teng had used the three divine artifacts and the Great Monster Sealing Formation to repair the rift in space.

Now, the expressions of those present immediately changed. They no longer dared to look down on Jing Teng when they looked at her now. They'd thought that she was just some concubine who was only good for her looks, but never expected her to be so skilled!

The Second Empress' expression became serious. She bowed respectfully to Jing Teng and said, "This one thanks Miss Jing for your favor in place of all the Fiend races' people. From today on, Miss Jing will be our Fiend races' most honorable friend."

She was the mother of an empire, after all. After she heard the entire story, how could she still be so small-minded as to continue acting jealous?

Jing Teng was stunned. At first, she'd felt a mysterious hostility from the other side, but she didn't really care about that at all. Either way, she only cared about Zu An alone. However, who knew that this person would suddenly become so friendly in the blink of an eye? She suddenly felt a bit awkward, because she'd previously only lived with people who were constantly trying to outwit each other, in a place where only strength mattered. She had never experienced sincere gratitude like this before.

"It actually wasn't that big of a deal. Ah Zu already promised to compensate me," Jing Teng said, uncomfortably waving her hand.

“How is he going to compensate you?” the Second Empress asked curiously.

Jing Teng blushed as she replied, “Him? Every day, he will... Mmm...!”

She couldn't say the rest of what she wanted to say, because Zu An already covered her mouth and said, “Don't worry, your highness. I'll thank her properly.”

“Is that so?” the Second Empress replied; her eyes darted between the two of them as she gave them a skeptical look.

The others saw how Zu An covered Jing Teng's mouth as if it wasn't that big of a deal, and how she didn't seem to have gotten angry either. They felt more and more admiration for him.

It seems the regent and this woman are already really close. He really is a model for all men!

...

Then, their group proceeded to Mengte City. Along the way, Zu An gave the Second Empress and everyone else a summary of what had happened so far. They were all really shocked as they listened. They had really never anticipated such ridiculous things to happen, and that there would be so many powerful enemies.

Forget about them, even Jing Teng was listening with great interest. As she looked at Zu An's handsome face, her smile grew bigger and bigger. Even though she didn't approve of a lot of things her big sister did, her eye for men was indeed not bad.

When they returned to Mengte City, the Fiend races' upper echelon organized a bonfire and celebratory feast. Even though they were lacking in supplies, when they thought about how the sealed land's dangers had now been completely eliminated and how they could now just focus on eliminating the monsters that had already crossed over, they couldn't hold back their joy.

The Fiend races were good at making alcohol, and the most famous was known as Burning Sky. This time, the higher-ups of the various races brought out all of their most precious collection. Meanwhile, as an important minister, Zu An was naturally someone they saw as the highest priority to propose a toast to, and there were many who even toasted to Jing Teng.

Unfortunately, Jing Teng wasn't interested in alcohol at all. Zu An saw how rigid her tone was and was worried that the others' good intentions would be spoiled, so he helped her drink. That was how these kinds of drinking gatherings went, after all. However, even with how tough Zu An's body was now, he still couldn't withstand round after round of alcohol for so long. Soon after, he could feel the intoxication start to settle in.

It was still the Second Empress who took care of him and quickly came over to stop what was happening. She had a subordinate general support Zu An back to his room to get some rest.

However, Jing Teng got a bit jealous and immediately refused to let the female general touch Zu An's body. She said, "I'll bring him to his room."

Laughter immediately broke out from all around. The Second Empress was a bit unwilling to let such a thing happen, but she couldn't really argue with Jing Teng in front of so many people and could only tacitly allow it.

Meanwhile, Jing Teng supported Zu An back to the room. As soon as she supported him onto his bed, she heard him mumble while tugging on his clothes, "It's hot..."

Jing Teng helped Zu An remove his clothes. When she saw his well proportioned chest rise and fall with his breathing, and how he seemed to be covered in a strange glow under the candlelight's glow, her eyes couldn't help but shine brightly.

...

Meanwhile, the dazed Zu An suddenly felt as if something wasn't right. His eyes widened as he looked down. He saw that Jing Teng was also lying on the bed. He didn't immediately realize what was happening, asking, "What are you doing?"

Jing Teng raised her head to look at him. Her hair was a bit scattered around her temples. Her lips were especially moist as she said, "You kept saying how uncomfortable it is, so I'm helping you."

She clearly had a pure and innocent appearance, and yet right now, there was a seductive charm to her appearance.

After being teased by her for so long, Zu An felt as if he was about to explode. With a growl, he flipped her over and pressed her down under him.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2088: We'll Both Have Our Own Fun

Meanwhile, at the bonfire feast, everyone was still drinking happily. The Second Empress eventually managed to excuse herself, then hurried to Zu An's room. However, when she was almost there, she suddenly stopped. Her pace became neither too fast nor too slow, and she recovered the natural grace of a ruler. She coughed lightly and said, "Aunt Xiao, help me prepare some hangover soup for the regent."

"Understood!" Aunt Xiao replied with a smile. It seemed as if she was thinking about something interesting, but she didn't dare to say it.

Once she left, the Second Empress then sorted out her clothes and hair. When she felt that her appearance was perfect, she then continued forward. She was about to knock on the door when she suddenly heard strange noises coming from inside. Her smile immediately froze on her face. Her hand stopped in front of the door, and only after some time did she pull it back.

"That woman really doesn't have any sense of shame! Is she not scared that other people will hear her?"

"And that Ah Zu, really! Do you have to go at it that hard?"

...

You have successfully trolled the Second Empress for +413 +413 +413...

Inside, Zu An was stunned when he saw the continuous string of incoming Rage points. He thus realized that the Second Empress was currently outside.

When she sensed that he suddenly stopped, Jing Teng clung to him like an octopus. She exhaled fragrant breath into his ear.

Zu An was still a bit tipsy and not that clear-headed. When he felt that, he couldn't be bothered with anything else. He continued the task he hadn't completed yet.

Jing Teng groaned. She discovered that Zu An seemed to be even hotter and more excited now, and her body melted even more.

When she heard Jing Teng's charming moans, the Second Empress harrumphed inwardly.

As expected of a natural seductress!

She couldn't stay any longer and turned to leave.

Not long after she left, she saw Aunt Xiao carrying some hangover soup. When she saw that the Second Empress' expression was off, Aunt Xiao asked in confusion, "Why are you leaving so quickly?"

"It's nothing. I suddenly don't want to go there anymore," the Second Empress said coldly.

Aunt Xiao was stunned, asking, "Then what do I do with this hangover soup?"

"Feed it to dogs!" the Second Empress snapped, then left without even turning back around.

Aunt Xiao was bewildered.

She was fine just a moment ago, so why is she like this now?

Don't tell me she had a fight with the regent?

However, even though the master was throwing a temper, she didn't dare to really feed the soup to dogs. She decided to still give it to the regent after all, so that he would know how much her highness cared about him. As such, she quickly carried the hangover soup to Zu An's room. She was about to knock on the door when she heard the noises coming from within. Her face immediately turned red as well.

She now finally understood why the Second Empress had left in anger. This newcomer woman was... quite proactive.

She harrumphed, then left after leaving the hangover soup by the door. After walking a few steps, however, she felt angry for her own master's sake. She turned around and took the hangover soup with her.

...

Meanwhile, inside the room, Zu An was also really shocked. He hadn't expected Jing Teng's soft and charming body to be hiding so much strength. Perhaps it was because of her experience as the overlord of the Ghost Realm, but Dark Jing Teng was tough, and she refused to give in. There were several times when she wanted to seize the initiative.

But Zu An wasn't someone who was used to yielding either, so the two tussled back and forth for a long time. In the end, Dark Jing Teng was still a bit lacking, and with one-slip up, she was defeated for the rest of the night.

When he saw her eyes roll back as if she was about to faint, Zu An felt more and more confident and followed up on the victory. He taunted, "Weren't you pretty good at this? Why did you stop? Keep going!"

Jing Teng opened her eyes in a daze. When she saw the scene in front of her, she sat there blankly, seemingly stupefied.

"Call me daddy!" Zu An cried. Even though he found her expression a bit strange, he was drunk right now, so his reactions were a bit slower than usual too.

Jing Teng's face immediately turned visibly red. Then, with a loud smack, she slapped Zu An's face and cried, "You're shameless, vulgar!"

Zu An was stunned, asking, "Just now, didn't you say that the one who lost had to call the other daddy?"

"You guys..." Jing Teng murmured, feeling ashamed and annoyed, but she didn't know how to explain herself.

When he saw the shyness and reservation in her expression, and how it was completely different from the fiery and daring one she'd previously had, Zu An suddenly realized something. He looked down and saw that the black leggings had become pure white.

"You're White Jing Teng..." he slowly said, feeling a bit embarrassed.

“Just what kind of nonsense game were you playing with her just now?!” White Jing Teng exclaimed, feeling as if she was going mad. She had finally woken up, and yet this was the first thing she experienced!

Zu An reflexively moved as he replied, “Isn’t it obvious?”

White Jing Teng’s cheeks turned bright red as she cried, “You’re still moving? Get off me!”

She tried to struggle to her feet, but unfortunately, he had her pinned down, so she couldn't get up at all.

Zu An also felt as if his head was going to explode from these two sisters. Just what was going on right now? But even though he was a bit muddle-headed, he knew that if she really left right now, things would become even harder to deal with later. That was why he disregarded the consequences and kissed her.

“Let me... mmm... go...” White Jing Teng protested in embarrassment. She continued to struggle underneath him.

Unfortunately, it seemed as if Zu An didn’t hear her at all. He kissed her firmly and domineeringly. At first, White Jing Teng resisted strongly, but her movements became slower and slower, and her resistance weakened. Her beautiful eyes became a bit watery. After all, he was her lover as well, and the two had shared an intimate relationship before.

Zu An was no longer as rough as he was with Dark Jing Teng. He became more and more gentle.

...

After who knew how much time had passed, Jing Teng touched the scars on Zu An's body in distress, asking, “Does it hurt?”

She felt she had panicked too much with her initial reaction.

It's all that Dark Jing Teng's fault!

“If you kiss that place, it won’t hurt anymore,” Zu An said as he looked at her with a smile. He had to admit that she really was shockingly beautiful. She clearly had a glamorous face and ridiculously sexy body, and yet she had a

pure personality that didn't seem to match her figure. That only made her even more captivating.

He thought that with White Jing Teng's personality, she would definitely refuse, but who would have thought that she would suddenly get up? Then, seemingly worried that her hair would tickle Zu An's body, she moved it behind her ear, exposing her cheeks that were red from embarrassment. Then, she kissed his wound.

Zu An was filled with tender feelings. He took her right into his arms.

Jing Teng's expression changed a bit as she said, "Wait, I need you to go more slowly..."

When he saw her lovable and timid behavior, Zu An was full of pity. He naturally couldn't bear to be too rough with her, and instead gently brought their heads together.

Jing Teng suddenly cried, "If you can't do it, then let me!"

Even though the voice was almost the same as White Jing Teng's, its tone was entirely different.

Zu An was shocked. He looked down and saw that the pure white stockings had once again turned a dangerous black.

It turned out Dark Jing Teng had woken up again! She had fainted earlier and was really embarrassed, but now that she had a bit of rest, she felt that she could go at it again. That was why she was impatient to get back her dignity. However, her stockings became white again and Jing Teng cried, "No way! You're crossing the line!"

When she thought about how her sister had used her body to mess around with Zu An, White Jing Teng felt really unhappy.

"The competent one should use the body! Stop occupying the toilet if you're not going to shit!" Dark Jing Teng cried as the stockings became black again.

Zu An's forehead darkened. *Am I the toilet or the...*

Sure enough, even White Jing Teng started getting angry, saying, "A woman shouldn't say such vulgar things."

“Who wants to always put on an act like you? You clearly really want it, but you say you don’t.” Dark Jing Teng harrumphed.

“Who said I really want it?!” White Jing Teng cried, almost fainting from anger.

“Then that’s perfect. If you don’t want it, I’ll do it. Isn’t it a win-win?” Dark Jing Teng laughed, as her evil scheme had worked.

White Jing Teng was speechless.

“I’m not letting you!” she shouted angrily. Even though she couldn't win against her sister in an argument, she still fought back for some reason.

Soon after, the two women's auras fought for control over their body. The stockings sometimes turned black, and sometimes white. In the end, neither could win against the other. One stocking became white and the other became black.

“Stop, stop, stop! I don’t want to waste the energy I finally recovered from this kind of internal conflict!” Dark Jing Teng cried out.

“Then you should just continue to sleep!” White Jing Teng snapped, feeling really annoyed that her sister was disturbing her time with her lover.

“Why do I have to go back to sleep? You probably don’t want to go back and sleep either. Isn’t what we’re like right now fine? We’ll both have our own fun,” Dark Jing Teng said as if it was completely reasonable.

White Jing Teng was speechless.

Zu An was alarmed.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2089: Return

White Jing Teng couldn't take it anymore, exclaiming, “Do you still have any sense of shame?!”

Dark Jing Teng was confused, saying, “You like him, and I like him too, but neither one of us wants to step aside. So why don’t we just both take a step

back and play together? Isn't that a pretty good idea? What part is there to feel ashamed about?"

White Jing Teng was speechless. She eventually asked, "Do you really have no idea, or are you pretending? How can we do this kind of thing together?"

"Why can't we do it together?" Dark Jing Teng snapped in annoyance. "I'm already trying to compromise here, and yet you're still being so pushy! In that case, you can't blame me for becoming hostile!"

White Jing Teng retorted angrily, "This is my body to begin with, so let's see just how you'll become hostile!"

"Isn't this also my body?" Dark Jing Teng replied, refusing to back off at all.

When he saw the two women arguing angrily back and forth, Zu An couldn't take it and advised them, "Sisters shouldn't be fighting like this..."

Both women looked at him at the same time and exclaimed, "You need to choose! Which one of us do you want to stay?"

Zu An was stunned. He hadn't expected to draw their aggression to himself. He looked at these two, who clearly shared the same body and said the same thing to him with the same face. He couldn't help but feel a bit amused, replying, "Isn't it the same?"

"We are not the same!" the sisters both said in unison.

They hadn't expected each other to say the same thing. Both harrumphed when they heard what the other person said. They wanted to turn their heads away, but one wanted to turn left and the other right, so they just remained in the same place. They could only stare at Zu An in annoyance and wait for his reply.

Zu An hesitated for a bit, then quietly said, "Only a kid would have to choose. Adults naturally want it all..."

The two women were stunned, but then they were extremely embarrassed. Even Dark Jing Teng, who supported this at first, had begun hoping that he would choose her. As such, both women were of the same opinion. They rushed at Zu An furiously to vent out their frustration and anger.

You have successfully trolled White Jing Teng for +444 +444 +444...

You have successfully trolled Dark Jing Teng for +444 +444 +444...

Zu An began screaming miserably from their bullying, but of course, it was hard to say whether he was really in pain or if he was actually happy.

...

The next morning, when Zu An woke up, he sought out a separate courtyard to focus on cultivation. After several days of intense battles, he now truly understood just how many powerful beings there were outside of this world, some even beyond his imagination. If he still didn't exercise any vigilance, he'd only end up being powerless again when he experienced something similar in the future. Of course, he definitely didn't want to go through what had happened ever again.

He used a set of sword skills in the courtyard, then circulated all of his various skills once. But midway through, he couldn't help but hold his waist.

I feel a bit sore...

What a bothersome woman... no, pair of women!

Suddenly, a voice remarked with a sneer "Tsk tsk, I didn't expect that even the iron-bodied regent could have a sore waist and back! It seems you definitely enjoyed an incredible time last night."

You have successfully trolled the Second Empress for +745 +745 +745...

When he sensed her uncontrollable anger, Zu An reacted quickly and explained, "What are you thinking about? These are injuries left from the battle against the Lord of Slaughter..."

Sure enough, when she heard that these were injuries from the battle, the Second Empress couldn't keep acting angry. She moved over and asked, "How do you feel right now? Should I bring over the military doctor to take a look?"

"It's fine, it just hurts a bit. I'll be fine after a few days," Zu An replied, feeling quite moved when he saw her nervous expression.

"Your body is clearly so strong and you can recover so fast, and yet you're still in pain. Does that mean that maybe there's some hidden injury? I think it's best if we have the physician take a look just in case," the Second Empress said nervously.

Zu An shook his head and replied, "Those who reach my cultivation realm understand our bodies better than most physicians. Don't worry, I'm really fine."

When she heard what he said, the Second Empress sighed in relief and said, "That's good. then." But immediately after, she asked with a big smile, "Why are you cultivating so early in the morning and leaving that little sister all alone in the room? You really don't know how to pamper women." Even though she was smiling, the cold glint that flickered in her eyes gave away her true intentions.

"Little sister?" Zu An replied, his expression strange. "Her age is probably much greater than yours."

"How is that possible?" the Second Empress asked, stunned. Sure enough, her attention was diverted.

"She isn't human. She might already have existed in this world for more than ten thousand years. It would be far from enough for you to even call her 'ancestral grandmother'," Zu An explained. He shared Jing Teng's background with her a bit, but of course, he concealed what he wasn't supposed to say.

The reason he did so was because he was worried that the Second Empress might provoke Jing Teng out of jealousy, then do some unwise things as a result. White Jing Teng was one thing, since even though she was still rather unfriendly, she was nowhere near as problematic as Dark Jing Teng. However, Dark Jing Teng had once been the infamous Ghost King, the type who easily killed without thinking. What if she really was offended badly and the two went after each other's throats?

Sure enough, the Second Empress was incredibly shocked. She opened her mouth several times, but in the end, she sighed and said, "So you liked older..."

Zu An was stunned.

This woman's brain seems to be a bit weird... Was that the most important part of what I said?

But he felt that it was still effective. After all was said and done, when she learned that Jing Teng was an 'ancestral grandma' over ten thousand years old, the Second Empress' jealousy calmed quite a bit. She eventually remarked, "Alright, that little girl... Ahem, that senior has really taken care of her appearance well. I have to remember to ask her for some tips later."

Zu An was speechless.

Jing Teng's method probably won't work for you.

...

Then, the main army continued to move. After all, the Second Prince's men were still at large, and they needed to quickly return to Primeval Iron City to reconvene with Peacock Wise King and reorganize.

Along the way, Zu An and the Second Empress rode side by side on their beasts. Meanwhile, Hu Qianxiao and many other leaders of the Fiend races were stunned, because Jing Teng was curled up in Zu An's arms intimately like a kitten. They couldn't help but give the Second Empress a look, but they didn't see any sign of anger or jealousy from her expression.

How is this possible?

They understood the Second Empress' personality way too well. She could be smiling on the surface, while being full of bloodlust deep in her bones. She was definitely a vicious and merciless individual. Even so, right now, she didn't seem as if she had any ill feelings inside at all!

Furthermore, the fact that the young lady was able to seal the foreign monsters meant that she was definitely some incredibly great individual. And yet these two women didn't seem to mind each other at all, rather seeming to get along. The onlookers were immediately filled with deep respect.

The regent really is unfathomable. Just how did he manage to accomplish this?

We only have a few wives back home, and apart from being a bit prettier than average, none of them have many skills at all, and yet the harem inevitably ends up in absolute chaos.

Sigh, it's a pity that we didn't ask the regent for some tips when he was drunk last night.

...

Meanwhile, Zu An was discussing how to deal with the monsters from now on with the Second Empress.

"We don't need to worry too much about the monsters that have already invaded. Since the source has already been sealed, we can take our time getting rid of them. It's actually the Second Prince that I'm worried about. He might be taking advantage of the fact that no one outside knows of his betrayal yet to stir up a huge disaster," the Second Empress said worriedly.

"Is there a chance of bad things happening to Primeval Iron City?" Zu An asked in a grave voice. "That's the Fiend race's base of logistics. If anything goes wrong there, even they might not be able to leave this place smoothly."

"It's unlikely. The Peacock Wise King is extremely detailed, and together with Nanwu's resourcefulness, the Second Prince shouldn't be able to fool them," the Second Empress replied after thinking to herself for a bit.

Zu An sighed in relief. After all, Yu Yanluo and the others had withdrawn to Primeval Iron City. Since the Second Empress had deduced that Primeval Iron City was fine, that meant there wasn't much to be worried about.

"Will he suddenly slaughter his way into the King Court and depose the young emperor?" he suddenly asked.

"That's exactly what I'm worried about," the Second Empress said, biting her lip. After all, the Second Prince was part of the royal family, and he had a lot of prestige. If he occupied the King Court, he could just completely reverse the situation. More importantly, the Second Empress' son was in the King Court.

"Don't worry. I heard the Peacock Wise King mention that because of the monsters' invasion, the path to the King Court is on high alert. It won't be easy for the Second Prince to lead his men straight there," Zu An said in consolation.

The Second Empress released a sigh of relief and said, "I hope that's the case."

The two of them both had their worries, so the army hurried back. Fortunately, the ones the Second Empress had brought with her were all the cream of the crop. They weren't slow at all, and after a few days of traveling, their group finally returned to Primeval Iron City.

When they first saw the army, the lookouts in Primeval Iron City immediately blew their bugles. All of the soldiers in the city had vigilant expressions.

But then, someone shouted excitedly, "It's the Second Empress and the regent!"

The entire city immediately cheered. Yu Yanluo and the Peacock race's father-daughter duo rushed out of the city. Yu Yanluo, in particular, had been rather scared and on edge. Now that she heard that Zu An had returned safely, she immediately felt really excited. She couldn't keep her composure and ran over quickly.

But then, she encountered the same trouble the Second Empress had. There was a beautiful woman nestled in Zu An's arms! Yu Yanluo couldn't help but stop in place.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2090: Provocation

When she saw Yu Yanluo's reaction, the Second Empress felt strangely refreshed. She couldn't just suffer this kind of feeling all alone, right?

It'll be even better if they end up fighting each other.

Unfortunately, she was disappointed, as Yu Yanluo didn't act up. Instead, she looked at Zu An with her beautiful eyes and said, "Ah Zu, you're finally back."

Now, it was Jing Teng's turn to be shocked. This woman's eyes really were alluring! Even she, as a woman, was a bit moved. This woman was so beautiful, and the way she spoke to Zu An was so special. Jing Teng couldn't help but ask, "Who is she?"

Naturally, it was Dark Jing Teng. White Jing Teng definitely wouldn't be able to cuddle up in Zu An's arms in front of so many people.

"She's the Medusa Queen, Yu Yanluo. She's also my lover," Zu An said, looking at Yu Yanluo with a smile. His eyes were full of warmth and gentleness.

The Second Empress immediately felt jealous.

Why didn't Ah Zu acknowledge our relationship when we had a similar situation last time?

Of course, she also knew that there was no way he would say that she was his lover in front of so many Fiend soldiers.

Sigh, I wish I were the Medusa Queen. She can just be with him legitimately.

Yu Yanluo also felt warm inside. She'd thought that Zu An would hide their relationship because he had that woman in his arms, but he actually didn't cover it up at all.

As expected of my strong and powerful man!

An ambiguous smile appeared on her face as she asked, "Did I come at a bad time?"

Zu An spread out his arms and replied, "No, you came at the perfect time."

When they saw that, the others' eyes widened.

Is the regent really that awesome?

Even if you can satisfy all of these women, can you really do it all at the same time?

The Second Empress had been screaming inside, rooting for a hell battlefield between these women. After all, the Medusa Queen was a clan leader. Did she really not want any face? Also, there was that woman... Her fussy temper didn't seem to be that agreeable. Perhaps Yu Yanluo could hold herself back, but she'd thought the other woman definitely wouldn't be able to.

Fight! The more fiercely, the better!

Yu Yanluo's expression also became a bit reproachful.

Ah Zu, this guy, really...

Still, she couldn't embarrass him in front of so many people. Besides, after this recent crisis, they had almost been separated forever by death. The only thing she'd wished for was for her sweetheart to come back safely. Now that her wish was satisfied, how could she still have such worldly misgivings? After just a moment of hesitation, she walked toward Zu An with a bit of embarrassment, then leaned into his arms.

When she saw Yu Yanluo walk over, Dark Jing Teng's brows rose. She was about to act up, but after thinking about it, she felt that Zu An was quite amazing. She and her sister weren't even a match for him when they worked together, so she felt that she needed to find some allies to help them out.

Hmm, this woman isn't bad. Not only is she beautiful, her complexion is rosy and her figure is amazing. She's definitely a woman who can pull her own weight.

When she thought about these things, her brows relaxed a bit. In fact, when Yu Yanluo leaned against Zu An's shoulder, Dark Jing Teng couldn't help but touch her hair and exclaim, "Huh? Your hair is really a bit special. How is it so thick?"

Yu Yanluo was a bit surprised when she sensed the other woman's strange friendliness. She reflexively replied, "That's a special trait of my bloodline. They can turn into snakes. Does that scare you?"

"Snakes? They're that interesting?" Dark Jing Teng replied, only becoming even more curious. "I want hair like this too!"

When they saw the two women chat as if they were sisters, the onlookers' jaws almost dropped to the floor.

The Second Empress was now feeling really depressed.

What is going on here? This great-aunt definitely didn't treat me that nicely back then!

Is Yu Yanluo really just that much more approachable than me?

As for Hu Qianxiao and the other Fiend generals, they were already about to prostrate themselves in admiration to Zu An. They had already felt that he was awesome enough before, but they'd never expected that there would be no upper limit to that, only more awesomeness.

At this point, is he still a mere person?

The Peacock Wise King couldn't help but turn around to look at his daughter. He knew that his daughter seemed to have some kind of mysterious good impression of the regent, but now, it seemed that she was most likely going to be left broken-hearted over this affair.

Kong Nanwu's face darkened for a moment. But soon after, a smile appeared on her face. She was a smart woman. Since there were already so many outstanding women around Zu An, why would she bother joining the liveliness? Just watching them from a distance was already enough.

In the end, the Second Empress couldn't stand the jealousy anymore and remarked, "How about we enter the city first?" She really wanted to add 'just how long do you three plan on hugging each other for', but in the end, she didn't.

Yu Yanluo finally became clear-headed. She gently pushed Zu An in embarrassment. Zu An chuckled and let go of her. Then, their group quickly entered the city.

...

Zu An and the Second Empress listened to the Peacock Wise King inside the city's main hall. They all felt extremely gratified and relieved that the Second Prince's plan hadn't succeeded.

The Second Empress held Yu Yanluo's hand and said, "Please don't be so foolish in the future! If something really happens to you, just how am I supposed to compensate for the losses?"

Yu Yanluo's expression remained warm and calm as she said, "Compared to the safety of Primeval Iron City and the Fiend races, how much worth does my petty life alone carry?"

The Second Empress gave Zu An an unhappy look and said, "But I think a certain someone probably doesn't think that way."

Zu An was also still feeling a lot of lingering fear. Thank goodness he had created that protective talisman against parasites, or else he likely wouldn't have been able to see her ever again. When he thought about the main culprit, his expression turned ice-cold. He asked, "Where is the Second Prince now?"

"After that day, the Second Prince knew that he likely wouldn't be able to take down Primeval Iron City for now, so he secretly left under cover of night," Kong Nanwu said.

"Did he head toward the King Court?" the Second Empress quickly asked.

"According to the information we received a few days ago, he didn't. Je seems to have headed east. I don't know just what his objectives are," Kong Nanwu replied. "For safety's sake, we had Princess Suolun contact the other clans along the way. The Second Prince didn't press toward the King Court, so he probably wishes to occupy some remote place and go into hiding."

When she heard that the King Court was safe, the Second Empress finally released a sigh of relief.

Zu An suddenly frowned slightly. He walked up to the giant map of the territory and asked, "According to your investigations, where has the Second Prince passed?"

"He passed through here, here, and here..." Kong Nanwu picked up a small rod and pointed at the map. They were indeed some remote and barren places that were difficult even for the Fiend races to survive in.

Zu An stared at the map and became quiet for a while. Then, his expression suddenly changed as he exclaimed, "He wants to attack the humans' reinforcement armies!"

It wasn't that Kong Nanwu and her father's strategies were insufficient, but as members of the Fiend races, they naturally subconsciously prioritized the King Court. Besides that, their attention had been focused completely on the sealed land, so they didn't understand the itinerary of the humans' reinforcement army too well.

Meanwhile, Zu An just happened to know it well. After all, he was the one who had planned the route of the human reinforcement army, and he'd even had

Tushan Yu coordinate with them. That was why he was able to guess what the Second Prince was doing from his movements.

Sure enough, Kong Nanwu's expression changed. She immediately guessed the Second Prince's schemes and cried, "Oh no! If the human reinforcements are attacked, that might trigger another war between our two sides! Then, the entire world will be in chaos, and the Second Prince will be able to benefit from the disorder!"

...

Meanwhile, the human reinforcement army had been traveling north. It was already dark, and the army had begun setting up camp.

In the main camp, an elder dressed in official robes was leisurely sipping on some tea, while two young individuals were debating something with reddened faces. One of them had thick brows and big eyes, while the other had fairer features.

"Respected king, we should assign more patrols around us. What if there's an enemy attack in the middle of the night?"

The elder was none other than the leader of the human reinforcement army - King Liang, Zhao Yi. Meanwhile, the youngsters were brothers from the Qin clan, Qin Guangyuan and Qin Yongde. Naturally, they wanted to regain honor for the Qin clan. Thus, as soon as they recovered, they had volunteered to join the expedition north as part of the reinforcement army. Even Qin Yongde, who normally lived a life of debauchery, was now much more mature than before.

King Liang said in a calm and unhurried voice, "We're all already really tired from this trip. The soldiers need to rest in order to preserve their fighting ability."

"But no matter how tired they are, scouting isn't something that you can neglect!" Qin Guangyuan said nervously.

"This is the Fiend races' territory, and Bluefield Country even escorted us along the way, treating us so well. If we sendt out more scouts, wouldn't that just show mistrust toward the Fiend races? What if we ended up ruining the hard-earned peace between us? Would you be able to handle the consequences?" King Liang replied, giving them a sidelong glance.

"We're soldiers and don't know that much. We only know that as soldiers, we need to ensure the safety of the army," Qin Guangyuan said stubbornly.

"If you're so worried, then you can bring your own men to go scout!" King Liang snapped impatiently.

The brothers exclaimed, "It has always been our own brothers who have been patrolling and standing guard the whole time! They're already incredibly exhausted, so we hope that the king can assign some more personnel..."

Slam!

"Wasn't all of that something you brought upon yourselves?" King Liang roared as he slammed the table. "This king has already tolerated the two of you for long enough. You two are full of criticism and keep throwing orders around as if you own the place. Are you the commander here or am I? Do you think the army is still your Qin clan's territory?! Get out of my sight!"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2091: Sacrifice

Chapter 2091: Sacrifice

The Qin brothers were about to continue arguing, but King Liang got impatient and had the guards drive them out.

Xie Xiu looked at the two of them with a big smile, remarking, "Didn't I already tell you that it's useless to talk to him?"

Qin Yongde harrumphed. "Pah, who does he think he is? If not for the fact that something happened to the Qin clan, would he ever have been able to boss people around and do whatever he wanted like this?"

"Watch what you say!" Qin Guangyuan immediately stopped him. "We're in troubled times right now. Please don't bring more trouble onto our Qin clan."

"I really can't stand him. He says that he's worried about the cooperation between the two sides, but isn't he just doing this to fawn on that Bluefield Country Lord?" Qin Yongde continued in annoyance.

Xie Xiu nodded and said, "That Bluefield Country Lord is indeed pretty."

Qin Yongde's eyes darted around. He put his arm around Xie Xiu's shoulder and said, "Brother Xie, you've always been good with women. What do you think about trying to get closer to that country lord?"

Xie Xiu replied with a bitter smile, "I like human women, okay? Also, there was nothing different in that Bluefield Country Lord's eyes when she saw me. Do you know why?"

"Does that even matter? Do you expect her to love you at first sight or something?" Qin Yongde asked in confusion.

Xie Xiu smiled, saying, "And that's why you still don't understand women well enough. The look in their eyes can reveal a lot of things. Even though this humble one isn't that handsome, I still think I have a bit of charm. If a woman has no reaction when they see me, there can only be two possibilities."

"Which two possibilities?" Qin Guanyuan asked curiously.

"One, she's blind. Two, she already has someone!" Xie Xiu answered with a sigh. "Bluefield Country Lord is clearly not the former, which means she's clearly the latter."

There was something else that he didn't say, which is that when they first met, Tushan Yu had already told him that she came because the regent entrusted her with this task. With Zu An's nature, it would be weirder if there was nothing between them.

Qin Yongde said with a smile, "With your skills, even if they have no feelings for you, you can still get closer to them."

Qin Guangyuan's expression became serious as he said, "Nonsense. How could you do something so indecent?"

Just then, a curious voice called out, "What kinds of indecent affairs are you talking about?"

Two beautiful figures drew closer. One carried the grace of a wise and virtuous lady, while the other was dressed in golden armor. Their figures were especially tall and slender. They were none other than Xie Daoyun and Murong Qinghe, who had also joined the operation to assist the Fiend races.

The men's faces immediately heated up. How could they still continue talking about this? They could only change the topic. "It's all because that King Liang is too despicable. He's not willing to assign troops to scout our surroundings."

"What else can we do? Our people have patrolled every day and can't take it anymore," Murong Qinghe said in worry.

They all came from military clans, after all, so they still had some servants traveling with them who had been sent over to assist in the fight, and also to protect the young masters. It seemed that perhaps King Liang was deliberately targeting them, as he never listened to their advice. They were worried that something would happen, so they could only lead their own people on patrols. Even so, they really were too few in number. They had to continue the march during the day and patrol the surroundings at night. Even their tough bodies couldn't handle it anymore, and gradually, complaints emerged from their ranks.

Qin Guangyuan said gravely, "My brothers can't take this much longer, so let's let them rest first. The three of us will take over sentry duty today."

Xie Xiu couldn't help but complain, "Sleeping too late will ruin the skin of a beautiful man like me!"

Qin Yongde put his arm around Xie Xiu's shoulder and secretly gave it a squeeze, asking, "Then are you going or not?"

"I'll go, I'll go..." Xie Xiu said with a miserable expression.

Xie Daoyun and Murong Qinghe both blurted out at the same time, "We're going too!"

Xie Xiu was stunned, asking, "Big sis, why are you going?"

The Qin brothers also quickly advised Murong Qinghe against the idea. They knew that she was the childhood sweetheart of Chu Youzhao, so they were worried that something could happen to her.

Xie Daoyun smiled warmly and said, "I'm not some weak and delicate daughter. Of course I have to do my part as well."

Murong Qinghe brandished the spear in her hands and said, "I spent a lot of time in the military and am already used to these kinds of things. Big sister Xie and I can look after each other too."

When they saw how stubborn the young women were about this, and thought about how they had to patrol all around at night even though they really did lack manpower, the three men could only agree.

...

Soon after, night fell. The Qin brothers each brought some subordinates to patrol one direction. Xie Xiu was placed in charge of one direction alone, while Xie Daoyun and Murong Qinghe were both placed in charge of the last direction.

The area the two women were assigned to spanned around two kilometers. They didn't notice anything strange. Besides, it had been quite peaceful recently, so they couldn't help but relax a bit.

"It seems the Qin brothers were worrying excessively after all," Xie Daoyun said with a smile.

"Big sister Xie, these are all things that a qualified military officer should do. Perhaps it might be useless ninety-nine times, but as long as it's useful once, it can save the lives of everyone in the army," Murong Qinghe explained.

"Ah, it seems I was too ignorant," Xie Daoyun said, feeling a bit embarrassed.

"Big sister Xie speaks too seriously," Murong Qinghe said in consolation. There weren't many women in the army camp, so the two of them were frequently together and had grown much closer than before. "By the way, big sister Xie, I heard that you used to frequently follow big brother Zu in his adventures. Can you tell me some stories about what happened?"

"It wasn't all that often. It was just once or twice," Xie Daoyun said. When she started to talk about Zu An, she became a bit shy.

The two women quickly started chatting with each other while continuing the patrol.

After an unknown amount of time passed, a shrill arrow suddenly whistled in the distance. The two women's expressions both changed, as the arrow came

from Qin Guangyuan's direction, and it was a special whistling arrow used for alarms. Thus, they both quickly rushed in that direction. Qin Guangyuan only had a few guards with him, so they knew it would be really dangerous if he really encountered an enemy attack. Xie Daoyun tossed out a few talismans to apply to Murong Qinghe's body, and Murong Qinghe immediately sensed that she had become much faster. The two quickly rushed to the scene.

There, the Qin brothers were sitting back to back, wounded. Their few personal guards had already collapsed in pools of blood, and the corpses of many Fiend soldiers were surrounding them. The reason why they hadn't been completely annihilated by the numerous Fiend soldiers around them was because Xie Xiu was risking his life to protect the two brothers.

Xie Xiu's fingers were like lightning as chess pieces fired out like bullets, taking down Fiend soldiers with each strike. Not even the best of the armor they wore was able to stop his attacks. Even so, there were just too many Fiend soldiers around them, accompanied by several officers who were quite powerful. Even with the help of formations, Xie Xiu was gradually pushed into a disadvantageous position.

Murong Qinghe shouted as she thrust her spear. She immediately rushed to Xie Xiu's side to defend against several Fiend soldiers attempting to ambush him. Her golden armor was elegant, and she had long and slender legs; when they saw that, the eyes of the surrounding Fiend soldiers immediately lit up. As they charged, they became a bit more excited.

Xie Daoyun quickly activated her talismans, and support skills quickly manifested to assist her companions. Talisman formations lit up in the air one after another, clearly weakening the incoming attacks.

However, dozens of crossbow bolts flew from the distance. The enemy was clearly no pushover; they realized how much of an impact Xie Daoyun had on the battlefield and didn't want to give her a chance to activate them fully. Helpless to do anything else, Xie Daoyun could only withdraw the formations, taking out some talismans to defend herself. In that instant, a group of Fiend soldiers quickly rushed up to her. Their cultivation wasn't low at all.

Xie Daoyun was a rune and formation master. Given enough time and distance, she could wipe out this small troop all on her own. However, in such a situation, no one would give her the chance to use all of her powers. She was quickly surrounded by peril.

Xie Xiu and Murong Qinghe quickly supported her, one from a distance and one from up close. Unfortunately, there were enemies all around them as well. They were soon caught within the enemy's ranks, and the space they could use to fight back grew smaller and smaller, while the pressure they faced only increased. They felt more and more despair. Judging from the scale of the enemy army, this was clearly not the main force and was just meant to stall them. As for where the main force was headed, that went without saying.

The group thought about the human army that was completely defenseless several kilometers away. If they were ambushed in the middle of the night, they were probably going to be completely wiped out!

Even so, they didn't have the freedom to think about all of that, because a dark figure swiftly flew out from the Fiend soldiers' camp at extreme speed. Even though everyone in the group did their best to defend and retaliate, they were still wounded.

Just then, a bat-like monster appeared, hanging upside down on a tree. It looked at the Fiend soldiers with disdain and remarked, "You all really are trash. You couldn't even deal with these people yet? Thank goodness the Second Prince sent me here."

The soldiers were all really angry, but they didn't dare to offend it. They knew that the monster was the Blackhair Bat, an emissary from the alien monsters. It was incredibly strong, and it liked to suck out blood essence from its targets. If they died in its hands, that would definitely be indescribably painful.

Then, the Blackhair Bat looked at Xie Daoyun and the others greedily and said, "You cuties are quite lively, especially those three young ladies. Your tender flesh will definitely be delicious."

Xie Xiu exclaimed furiously, "Open your damned eyes, I'm a freaking man!"

He took out a chess board and was about to attack when he suddenly staggered. He fell to his knees, hissing, "Poison!"

As soon as he said that, Xie Daoyun and Murong Qinghe also both felt dizzy. They looked at the wounds on their arms and saw black blood already starting to come out.

"Heh heh, beautiful ladies, accept my warm embrace and become my slaves!" The Blackhair Bat cried out. Naturally, it wouldn't let such a good chance go

and immediately rushed over. When it spread its wings, they immediately extended ten meters outward, instantly surrounding the two women.

Xie Daoyun tried to summon something, but the poison activated and she couldn't move at all. She was full of regret. It seemed like she still lacked real fighting experience... If she had immediately exerted herself to use the Record of High Firmament, perhaps the battlefield would be entirely different.

A decisive look flickered through Xie Xiu's eyes. Several black and white pieces flashed around him, and Xie Daoyun and Murong Qinghe appeared at his side, while he appeared inside the Blackhair Bat's wings. This was an ultimate skill that Hei Baizi had researched through chess theory, Substitution! Depending on the state of the game, as long as he believed that there were enough benefits, he could sacrifice a piece. Although usually, someone else was used as the sacrifice, the user was now treating himself as the sacrificial piece.

"Noooo!" Xie Daoyun cried, naturally recognizing what the skill was. When she saw her little brother face death in her place, she immediately felt endless despair.

"Hm? That's interesting. But I'll just eat you first and then slowly enjoy those two beauties after," the Blackhair Bat said, then laughed sinisterly.

It was about to devour the young man in its arms when a resplendent sword descended from the sky, nailing its head to the ground.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Read Keyboard Immortal - Chapter 2093: How Can I Not Grant Your Request?

Chapter 2093: How Can I Not Grant Your Request?

A hint of greed flashed through King Liang's eyes, but he quickly concealed it. He said, "There were some important military matters that I wished to discuss with the country lord, but your subordinates actually stopped us and prevented us from meeting."

"You two, really! King Liang, why didn't you tell me if you had something to talk about?" Tushan Yu remarked. She was an incredibly beautiful woman, with countless pursuers all around her. How could she not know what King Liang was really thinking? However, she didn't expose him, and pretended to scold her subordinates to let the matter pass instead. She asked, "May I ask what it is that King Liang needed to talk to me about tonight?"

King Liang naturally wouldn't continue to chase after the prior matter, as that would only ruin his image. He used the chance to say, "We aren't too familiar with the Fiend races' territory. I wonder if the country lord has assigned any soldiers to patrol the surroundings?"

Tushan Yu was stunned, asking, "Could it be that your side didn't assign any patrols?" She thought that was absolutely unbelievable, as such a thing was something any army would know to do.

King Liang's face heated up and he quickly said, "I did want to assign some guards to patrol the surroundings, but there are some brats on our side who stopped me and said that doing so would make it seem as if we didn't trust you, and that it would tarnish the relations between our two sides. I didn't want to listen to them, but I couldn't go against their clans that have military influence. Their seniors have extraordinary prestige in the army, so I couldn't offend them too harshly."

If the Qin clan brothers heard this, they would definitely curse loudly, thinking, *How could there be such a shameless person in this world?!* However, King Liang said all that without even batting an eyelid.

Tushan Yu was a bit surprised. She was a bit confused, because she had met the Qin brothers before, and they didn't really seem to be like that. However, she said with a smile, "Then we've really troubled the king. But in my opinion, we still ought to have the patrols just in case. Safety is most important after all." The reason she hadn't assigned sentries was mainly because she didn't want to act out of place.

"Your words are wise, country lord," King Liang said. When he saw her beautiful smiling face, he was really itching deep down. He was about to tease her some more when he suddenly heard a screeching arrow. The expressions of those present changed. No matter how ignorant King Liang was, even he knew that it was an alarm arrow.

“What... What happened?” he asked those around him in a panic. But they had been with him all this time, so how could they know what had happened?

King Liang thought to himself, *I was just here to flirt with women. Why did I end up encountering this kind of thing?*

There were vague shouts of fighting in the distance. The entire camp was in disorder. Even so, the human army still had talented individuals. Soon after, a vice-general led a group of brave men over to remind King Liang to return to the main tent at once. Otherwise, it would be bad if soldiers came for orders and he wasn't there.

“Yes, yes, let's hurry on back,” King Liang said, nodding hurriedly. He was in such a rush that he almost fell.

When she saw how out of his wits he was, Tushan Yu felt disdain for him. She quickly gathered her subordinates to have them prepare for battle. At the same time, she prepared to look into what exactly had happened.

Just then, another group charged straight through to them. The one in the lead was dressed in dazzling golden armor that contrasted greatly with the black-armored soldiers around him.

When she saw his impressive demeanor, Tushan Yu's expression completely changed. She exclaimed, “The Second Prince?”

Shouldn't the Second Prince be in the sealed land? Furthermore, the Second Empress even went to save him with great fanfare. Why did he suddenly appear here?

Even though she didn't fully understand the situation, she instinctively felt that something wasn't right.

Suddenly, the Second Prince gave King Liang and the others a vigilant look, then looked at Tushan Yu and said, “Bluefield Country Lord, your mission is complete.”

Tushan Yu was bewildered.

King Liang acted as if he had suddenly realized what happened. He pointed at Tushan Yu in , roaring, “You're really something! You two already colluded a long time ago and baited us into an ambush!”

Tushan Yu was speechless.

This guy seems to be a bit slow in the head normally, but why is his reaction so fast now? More importantly, why is he being so dramatic?

“King Liang, please don't listen to his nonsense. I came on orders from...”
Tushan Yu began.

Before she even finished what she wanted to say, however, the Second Prince cut her off. “Country lord, please hurry and come to this side. It's safer here.”

King Liang seemed almost as if he'd received some kind of suggestion and hurriedly shouted, “We can't let them group together! Seize Tushan Yu and make her our hostage!” As soon as he said that, he charged straight at Tushan Yu. He grabbed at her with his hands curved into claws.

When they saw the attack, Tushan Yu's guards all retaliated. In response, King Liang's subordinates interfered too.

Tushan Yu tried to protect herself while shouting, “King Liang, you've misunderstood! He's trying to incite disharmony between us!”

King Liang knew that the main army wasn't prepared for any of this. An ambush in the middle of the night would have terrible consequences. After hearing what Tushan Yu said, he had his doubts, but he couldn't think of any other solutions at the moment. Thus, he planned to take Tushan Yu as a hostage first. Then, perhaps they would at least have a chance of mounting a comeback!

That was the only thought in his mind, as well as the only thing he could count on. He had even finished thinking things through, concluding that even if he wrongly blamed her, as long as he insisted on that point, he would be fine even once they went back to the court. They wouldn't be able to find any fault in him. As for the soldiers suffering tragic ends, what did that have to do with him?

The other soldiers didn't think through things as thoroughly as he had. When they saw him move, they reflexively drew their weapons and attacked Bluefield Country's group as well. After all, people often followed orders blindly. In this kind of crisis, now that someone was taking the lead, they often didn't take time to think properly.

Tushan Yu didn't have any time to explain anything as both sides quickly started to fight against each other.

The Second Prince grinned. If the human army and Tushan Yu's troops had cooperated immediately, perhaps he would have suffered some losses. Now that they had started to fight among themselves, things were incredibly easy for him.

Bluefield Country didn't excel at fighting. Furthermore, with King Liang's higher numbers, Tushan Yu quickly fell at a disadvantage. Many on her side were hurt, and it was unclear if they were alive or dead.

The Second Prince shouted, "Bluefield Country Lord, let me lend you a helping hand!" His subordinates rushed over. He was worried that if he let this continue for too long, the two sides would realize that something was off, so it was better to use the chance to muddy the waters even more.

King Liang felt as if a huge stone had dropped on his chest. He screamed, "You colluded with the enemy from the inside after all! All of you, swiftly accept your deaths!"

He still had master rank cultivation, and his guards were all elite soldiers. They quickly cut through with tremendous force. Bluefield Country's soldiers couldn't stop him. The Second Prince claimed to be helping Tushan Yu on the surface, but he didn't actually exert himself that much.

Tushan Yu soon couldn't withstand it anymore. After suffering a blow, she coughed out blood as she was blown backward.

When he saw how beautiful she looked even while she was coughing blood, King Liang was a bit stirred inside and held back a little.

She is the lord of a country, after all. Even though I have a lot of authority, I normally wouldn't have any way to obtain her. But if she colluded with the enemy from the inside and caused the human army to suffer a crushing defeat, I'd have a proper pretext to capture her. Then wouldn't I be able to do whatever I wanted with her on the way back?

He wasn't too worried about his own safety. In this kind of situation, the enemy was clearly focused on surrounding the main camp. Otherwise, it would be dangerous for them if this army was given time to gather and prepare to fight back. There was no way this Second Prince was that stupid,

so even if anyone died, it would be the other military officials. As the main general, he had so many guards around him. He could use the chance to break out of the encirclement and escape.

King Liang thus pounced on Tushan Yu's body. He was so close could even see her trembling eyelashes.

She really is a stunning woman!

He reflexively used a bit less force. After all, it would really be a pity if he ended up killing such a beauty.

Suddenly, a figure appeared at Tushan Yu's side and took her into their arms. Then, that person stared coldly at him.

When he saw who it was, King Liang trembled. His outreached hand stopped in front of him, and he looked at the other person with a complicated expression, murmuring, "So it was the regent..."

Just a few years prior, this person had just been a trifling drafted son-in-law from Brightmoon City. Back then, their statuses had been as far apart as heaven and earth. He wouldn't even have had to do anything himself. Just a look from him, and his subordinates would make this brat wish he were dead.

And yet, just how much time had passed? Somehow, Zu An had already grown to a point that King Liang had no choice but to look up to him.

Tushan Yu had been struggling for her life and never expected to fall into a warm embrace. When she sensed that familiar feeling, she was startled and happy, crying out in a sweet and lovable voice, "Regent~"

In the distance, Xie Daoyun felt goosebumps appear all over her body.

Murong Qinghe couldn't help but ask her quietly, "Big sister Xie, do you think this Bluefield Country Lord and big brother Zu have something going on between them?"

Xie Daoyun replied with a frown, "Why don't you go and ask your big brother Zu later?"

"There's no way I could do that!" Murong Qinghe exclaimed worriedly.

Big brother Zu is good in every other way, but he's just too fickle in love.

Zu An looked at King Liang with an ice-cold expression, saying, "Not only did you not collaborate and fight alongside the Bluefield Country Lord when facing a great enemy, you started to fight against each other instead. Why is that?"

King Liang hurriedly said, "Regent, you might not know this, but this woman colluded with the Second Prince from the inside, leading them to ambush our main army! I was about to capture her to use her as a hostage!"

"I didn't..." Tushan Yu was about to explain when Zu An stopped her.

"Do you have proof?" Zu An asked, looking at King Liang.

When he saw that Zu An hadn't even listened to Tushan Yu's explanation, King Liang was inwardly happy. He replied, "If it wasn't for her colluding with the enemy from the inside, how could the Second Prince appear here silently? Besides, the Second Prince said so himself and everyone heard it. Right, you guys?"

"Yes..." people replied slowly. However, apart from the ones who were fiercely loyal to him, the others were starting to wake up and realize that something wasn't right. Why did they feel the something was off?

"Do you just believe everything the enemy tells you? You still have no idea even after falling for the enemy's schemes. Absolutely useless!" Zu An cursed coldly.

King Liang's expression changed as he said, "I am still a senior relative of the current emperor. Regent, please watch what you say!"

"You still have the nerve to say that the Second Prince appeared here mysteriously? Isn't it because you didn't arrange any guards?! The Qin brothers advised you to do so several times, but you refused them each time, causing the human race's reinforcements to almost be completely wiped out. My criticism of you is nothing compared to that," Zu An said. He thought to himself, *If it wasn't because the empress dowager and empress were trying to keep each other in check, why would they ever assign such an idiot here?*

King Liang also screamed, "There are some things that can't be said irresponsibly! Wasn't it the regent who recommended this woman to escort us, which was why I completely trusted her? I was worried that the relations between the two sides would be harmed and that you would lose face, so that

was why I didn't assign many patrols. Now that something is wrong with your own people, you're shifting the blame to me! This is absolutely preposterous!"

When they heard what he said, many soldiers began to discuss things spiritedly, as if there was some reasoning to his words.

Murong Qinghe now spoke up and said, "Tsk, you make yourself so high-sounding, but wasn't it because you coveted Bluefield Country Lord's beauty yourself and wanted to leave her with a good impression? And yet, because of that, you ended up risking the lives of countless comrades!"

When he sensed the doubtful looks of the soldiers all around him, King Liang started panicking. He retorted, "Don't you like that Chu clan brat? And the regent is the Chu clan's young master. Of course you'd speak up for him!"

Murong Qinghe was embarrassed and panicky, exclaiming, "The Qin clan's brothers have suggested for you to assign patrols several times, but they're both seriously injured because of you! Big sister Xie can also attest to this."

"Who doesn't know that this Xie girl likes the regent?!" King Liang sneered.

Xie Daoyun had been about to say something, but when she heard that, her face immediately became entirely red. She exclaimed, "What kind of nonsense are you saying?!"

King Liang was about to say something else when Zu An stopped him, snapping, "Enough! For hindering military affairs, neglect of duty, and almost becoming a great sinner of the human race, men, arrest Zhao Yi to be escorted back to the capital to stand trial."

"Who dares?!" King Liang cried, brandishing his weapon at the incoming soldiers. "Mister Zu, I am the chief commander of the army that the court has assigned, and I am his majesty's grandfather. What qualifications do you have to arrest me?! Are you using this chance to collude with the Fiend races? If you have the skill, then just kill me now, or else once I return to the capital, I will definitely..."

Before he even finished speaking, a dazzling sword flickered, and a head flew straight into the sky.

Zu An shook away the droplet of blood on the tip of his sword, remarking, "Since you asked for it, how can I not grant your request?"

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2094: Ancestral Bloodline

King Liang's head rolled across the ground a few times until it was covered in dirt and weeds. His widened eyes were full of disbelief.

He had never expected in his wildest dreams that Zu An would actually just kill him. Even though he'd known that Zu An killed King Jin in the capital, that was just a junior of the royal family, someone who didn't have too much influence. But he was different! He was an important minister of the court, a master rank cultivator with extraordinary virtue and prestige! More importantly, he had been assigned as the chief commander of the human army this time, someone with a massive military force under him!

He'd only planned to say some fierce words, followed by something that would give Zu An a chance to back off. Then, he would also drop the matter after that. That way, he wouldn't lose too much face either. But how could he have known that Zu An wouldn't act according to proper reasoning at all?!

The others were all stunned. King Liang's status was extraordinary, and he was a master rank expert himself. Why had he been killed so easily?

They all looked at Tushan Yu in Zu An's arms and suddenly realized something.

Could it be that King Liang was poking at something he shouldn't have?

"You actually dared to kill King Liang!" King Liang's trusted aides finally reacted and drew their blades toward Zu An.

"What, do you have any objections?" Zu An replied indifferently.

The reason why he'd killed King Liang was because he was worried that the king would continue to mislead the public and incite disharmony within the human army. If he let that idiot continue to act up at such a critical juncture, who knew what kind of erratic things he would do? Rather than leading the human army into an unsalvageable situation, he figured he'd just cut straight through the mess decisively. When he saw the looks in their eyes, he could

naturally guess what they were thinking. He just didn't feel like explaining it to them.

King Liang's trusted subordinates saw the coldness in Zu An's eyes, but when they opened their mouths, none of them could say anything. King Jin, King Dai, and the Meng clan had been so impressive, and yet, how had they ended up? There was a clear lesson to be learned from them, so they didn't dare to court death upon themselves. At the same time, they grumbled inwardly, *Did King Liang go mad? He could have chosen to offend anyone, yet he just had to offend this lunatic.*

"Brilliant, truly brilliant!" Suddenly, a burst of applause filled the air. The Second Prince clapped, remarking, "I thought that it was only our Fiend races that followed the law of the jungle. We all praised the humans as a society of etiquette, but it seems we're all the same, no? The one with the biggest fist is the one with etiquette. What's the point in keeping up all the usual pretenses then?"

Many human soldiers' expressions changed when they heard that. Today's events really didn't follow normal procedure. Even if King Liang hadn't been a king, with his identity as the chief commander, there would have been no reason for him to be executed on the spot. He should have been brought back to be tried by the three ministries.

Zu An remarked, "Second Prince, why bother trying to sow dissent between us? You've colluded with alien monsters and almost brought doomsday upon this world. It's time for me to settle this matter with you."

The Second Prince's expression changed slightly, but it quickly changed back. He replied, "You're still in the mood to settle things with me? Are you not going to bother with your human race's main army? If you still don't head over now, they might soon be completely wiped out."

The reason why he'd been so confident all this time was because he understood that point clearly. As long as he stalled the leader of the humans here, the main force could use that chance to charge into the human camp. The human army hadn't prepared many defenses at night, after all. Once they were attacked and widespread panic set in, it would practically be a one-sided slaughter. The better the fight went on that side, the more options he would have on this side.

"I don't need to worry about that side, because your men's attacks won't make it through for quite some time," Zu An said, seeming to have already anticipated that the prince would say that.

The Second Prince's expression changed. He flew into the air and saw that a transparent formation was already surrounding the main army. His men were frantically attacking the defensive cover. However, under the directions of various commanders, the army inside the cover was also gradually waking up and arranging themselves. The Second Prince's heart plummeted, as the human army was already reorganized. Even if they broke through the protection, they would lose the advantage of surprise.

"Why are you always ruining my plans?!" the Second Prince cried, giving Zu An a look of resentment. If it weren't for this guy, he would already be the new Fiend emperor, and he wouldn't have been forced to walk this path.

You have successfully trolled the Second Prince for +444 +444 +444...

Zu An looked at him coldly and said, "Sins caused by the deities can be forgiven, but sins caused by oneself cannot be spared!"

"Do you really think you've completely won against me?" the Second Prince retorted in annoyance. He waved his command banner, and rows and rows of crossbow marksmen and formation masters appeared from the nearby forest. As they fired on the humans, the crossbow bolts were all supported by shining techniques.

King Liang's soldiers were horrified. They hadn't brought their rune shields in the middle of the night, and there was no way they could deal with these powerful magical attacks. They would be ripped to shreds in just a few seconds.

Just then, Zu An soared into the sky to stand between them and the lights. An ancient-looking yellow bell suddenly appeared in the center of his palm, and his finger tapped against its surface. An invisible bell toll rippled out. It collided with the shining techniques, and the attacks were actually scattered into bits of starlight. The Second Prince's subordinates' eyeballs were about to pop out. They had never seen an army's attacks so easily blocked by a single person.

Zu An remained completely indifferent, however. The Tranquility Bell was Tranquility Temple's most important treasure. Even though this was just an

imitation created by the Rune Weapon Chart, and it likely wouldn't be able to stop the most powerful beings, it was more than enough against the attacks of ordinary soldiers.

The Second Prince gave out more orders. "What are you all gawking at? Continue the attacks!"

He normally managed his army with strict discipline. Even though his soldiers were really shocked, they instinctively responded to his order and prepared to attack again. They knew that after what had happened in the sealed land, there was already no chance of mediation. Either Zu An would die, or all of them would perish without a proper burial.

Countless lights and weapon attacks gathered, and they were just about to fire when countless golden sword ki poured down like rain, nailing the Second Prince's soldiers to death. Zu An knew that these people's beliefs had already been twisted, and they were all accomplices to the murder of countless Fiend soldiers. That was why he didn't show any mercy.

A shrill bird's cry resounded. The Second Prince turned into a giant golden crow. Then, it opened its mouth and fired a terrifying fireball at Zu An.

It was the Golden Crow Sacred Fire!

This fire was rumored to be comparable to the Phoenix and Vermilion Bird's fires. A lot of plants on the ground visibly shriveled and burned up while it was still in midair. Everyone present tugged at their collars, covered in sweat. They felt as if they were about to be lit on fire.

A resplendent streak of sword radiance rose into the air. The terrifying fireball was cleaved in half and erased from the world. However, the sword didn't stop and continued toward the golden crow in the sky.

Countless sparks exploded, and the golden crow screamed; its body was sliced in half.

Those present widened their eyes. The Second Prince couldn't even take a single attack?

Suddenly, the two halves of the golden crow shone with golden brilliance, and the two flames merged together, restoring its appearance once more. But

now, it was a bit smaller than it had been at first. The few surviving soldiers on the Second Prince's side cheered.

Zu An wasn't too surprised to see that. When he fought against the Golden Crow Crown Prince, the opponent had also had these self-healing skills.

Looking at Zu An, the Second Prince flew into the air with an expression of fear. He was reliving the moment when this man defeated the masses and supported his younger brother to the throne. But even though Zu An had been strong back then, it wasn't to this extent, right?

Even so, he was a decisive person. When he saw that, he activated his bloodline power. In the past, the monsters had helped him activate the ancestral power in his bloodline, but he had always been on guard against them and didn't use it. But now, he clearly had no choice. Even if those monsters had played a trick on him, he had to deal with this matter first and worry about the consequences later.

Soon after, a terrifying fluctuation spread out through the air. The soldiers with slightly weaker cultivations fainted on the spot, while those with higher cultivations felt their limbs turn ice-cold and goosebumps appearing all over their bodies.

The horses and beasts that had been trained for a long time by the military were in an even worse state. Compared to humans, their instincts were stronger. They all lay on the ground and trembled in fear, with many of them pissing themselves on the spot.

The golden crow in the sky became many times larger than before. Its wingspan exceeded a kilometer in length, and it was as if there was a giant sun behind it, one that silently overlooked all living things.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2095: Thunderous Suppression

As he looked at the giant golden crow in the sky, Zu An was a bit surprised. There seemed to be demonic flames surging around the Second Prince, whose current state was comparable to that of the late Fiend Emperor. Zu An remembered how the Little Golden Peng King had also suddenly become

stronger, as if the alien monsters had activated the ancient bloodline power within their bodies.

Could it be that the Flend races really are deeply related to those alien monsters?

When he saw Zu An stand there in a daze, the Second Prince felt really pleased with himself. He remarked, "You never expected this, did you? My strength is now already on par with father emperor's past peak. You must be feeling a lot of regret now, right?"

When he sensed the demonic power filling his body, he felt extremely confident. It was as if no one else could compare to him in this world. He was even starting to feel some regret. So power actually carried such a feeling! If he had known it would be like that, he would have used this power sooner. He even felt that with his current power, he could now easily win against the alien monsters even if they played some tricks.

Zu An was a bit confused, replying, "Why would I feel regret?"

"You must be regretting how arrogant and conceited you were when you spared me back in the King Court," the Second Prince said, getting more and more excited. "But it's such a pity that you don't have any chances left. I'll teach you that even after thirty years on the east bank of the river, and thirty years on the west bank, it's still unwise to underestimate the young..."

Before he even finished, a square seal flew at him. As it flew, it grew bigger and bigger. In the end, it crashed down right on top of him like a mountain. His body was struck until it plummeted from the sky, so the rest of his words were naturally cut off.

"Nonsense!" the Second Prince exclaimed furiously. He'd wanted to show off a bit, and yet he was knocked out of the sky by this thing.

So many soldiers are still watching! What about my dignity?

You have successfully trolled the Second Prince for +444 +444 +444...

He reflexively tried to fly into the air again, but unexpectedly, the seal was just too incredibly heavy. All of his muscles strained to the fullest, and yet the object pressing down on him only became heavier and heavier. The huge seal flowed with yellow light that came down in strand after strand. The surface

flowed with a natural rhythm of the universe that surrounded the Second Prince. He tried to flap his wings several times, but underneath its weight, he was still completely helpless.

“Human Emperor Seal?” the Second Prince suddenly exclaimed in horror. The reason why he recognized this item was because he had watched one of the great battles between his father and the human emperor. In the past, the weapon the human emperor had used was none other than this seal.

In the past, Zhao Han’s invincible figure had left him with an indelible impression. After all, in his eyes, his father was like a deity, and yet even the Fiend Emperor had been at a disadvantage in that fight. This Human Emperor Seal was the main weapon used by Zhao Han back then, so the Second Prince couldn’t help but have a deep impression of it.

The human soldiers also saw this scene. When they saw that huge seal that was surrounded by strands of dao rhythm, some generals recognized it. They excitedly shouted, “The Human Emperor Seal! It’s the Human Emperor Seal!”

In the hearts of the human race, the Human Emperor Seal was a divine item. To a certain degree, it represented a kind of faith, a kind of mental pillar.

However, while many people felt extremely excited, they were also a bit confused.

Wasn’t the Human Emperor Seal lost in the secret dungeon with the late emperor? Why is it with the regent?

Even when he saw the people’s doubtful looks, Zu An didn’t bother to explain himself. He had kept this Human Emperor Seal hidden the entire time, and never used it precisely because he hadn’t wanted to be associated with Zhao Han’s death. But now that alien monsters were invading and the world had almost been destroyed, leaving his beloved Chuyan and Honglei both half-dead, he couldn’t care less about such things anymore. Besides, even if some people suspected that he was connected to the death of Zhao Han, so what?

“You bastard, ahhhh!” the Second Prince cried, feeling incredibly wronged. He’d been knocked out of the sky as soon as he began to show off and was never able to break free. It really drove him crazy. He felt as if his present cultivation was already equal to that of the late Fiend Emperor, so why was he left in such a sorry state by a single Human Emperor Seal?

He couldn't figure it out, but Zu An knew why that was the case. The Human Emperor Seal carried the will of the people. Now that the alien monsters were destroyed and the world was preserved, the morale of the human race was flourishing. How could it be so easily endured?

Besides, the Second Prince's cultivation had only suddenly shot up, so how could he adapt to his power, cultivation, and skills growing countless times stronger all of a sudden? Naturally, only his cultivation was about equal to that of the late Fiend Emperor. In a real fight, the late Fiend Emperor could have easily crushed him. Perhaps he wouldn't even be able to compare to the Little Golden Peng King, who had clearly already awakened his ancient bloodline long ago and frequently trained with it, getting used to his new power.

In the eyes of the current Zu An, the Second Prince was full of openings and mistakes. Thus, he didn't give the prince any time to adjust or adapt and immediately crushed him.

A furious roar resounded. The Second Prince's entire body surged with flames. He was actually able to forcibly resist the Human Emperor Seal and stand back up, saying, "Hmph, do you think that a trifling Human Emperor Seal could really trap me..."

His words came to a screeching halt, because a streak of sword radiance flashed, and a head fell to the ground. The headless Second Prince's body fell down after it, and the Human Emperor Seal descended down with the will of the human race, crushing the prince's body into pieces.

"You really know how to shoot your mouth off," Zu An said as he put away the sword.

The Second Prince had already had his body restricted by the Human Emperor Seal. If Zu An still couldn't take his life, he really would be beyond incompetent. After fighting against such terrifying beings as the Shadow Monster King and the Lord of Slaughter, fighting against the Second Prince was like fighting against a kindergartener.

The entire battlefield was so quiet one could hear a pin drop; all those present watched in disbelief.

The human soldiers hadn't understood the Second Prince's true strength fully. However, they had sensed that the terrifying aura coming out from his body was on par with that of Zhao Han and the late Fiend Emperor, so they had

subconsciously put him in the same category. And yet, such a being was so easily dealt with by a single cut from the regent? Just how high was the regent's cultivation?!

Many generals had been wondering if the regent participated in the death of the late emperor. After all, there were too many points of suspicion in Zhao Han's death, and he was the only person at the late emperor's side when he passed. However, when they saw this scene, they all suppressed such idle speculation.

What late emperor or whatnot? All we need to do is follow the regent.

At first, King Liang's trusted aides were still a bit upset, and many of them had been planning to coordinate with the other generals in the army and get revenge for King Liang. But when they saw that, they all busily sorted out their clothes.

We weren't really that close to King Liang to begin with, right? We're just workers earning a few hundred silvers a month. Why would we risk our lives over something like that?

As for the Second Prince's subordinates, they were left completely at a loss. Many of them even reflexively rubbed their eyes, wondering if their eyes were playing tricks on them. After all, the Second Prince was a famous general of the Fiend races. Over the years, he had led them to countless victories. Even in the sealed land, a place where they had been doomed to eventually die, he'd found a path of survival for them. They already treated him like their deity. On top of that, the cultivation they had just witnessed had made them feel as if they were looking at the late Fiend Emperor.

And yet, after just a single sword slash, it was all finished?

All of them had been holding onto a single belief. As long as the Second Prince returned to the King Court and became the Fiend Emperor, they would no longer be traitors and would instead become subjects with incredible merit. However, as the Second Prince had been killed instantly, all of them completely collapsed as well. No one needed to take the lead; they all fled for their lives.

The human soldiers wanted to chase after them, but they didn't understand the terrain too well. There were too many Fiend race soldiers, as well, so they weren't confident that they would be able to catch the lot.

Zu An's voice echoed across the sky as he called out, "All those who followed the Second Prince can choose to drop your weapons and surrender to be put on trial by the King Court. All others will be executed on the spot."

Some Fiend soldiers couldn't help but hesitate when they heard that. However, others continued to run without any hesitation.

Are you kidding me? We're the direct followers of the Second Prince. If we're tried by the court, we're dead for sure, so we might as well take the gamble here! That way, we'll at least still have a chance.

There are so many people here, after all, and the terrain is so complicated. No matter how strong that Zu An is, how many can he catch?

Just then, there was a huge explosion. Winds stirred throughout the forest, so powerful that many people couldn't even keep their eyes open. Countless metal birds with spinning heads appeared in midair. Their bellies suddenly released countless tongues of flame. All of the soldiers that had continued to run without listening were blown to pieces.

There were many among them that had high cultivation and reflexively wanted to retaliate, but unfortunately, they were already overcome by fear and panic, so they couldn't fight together in a coordinated manner. How could they be a match for armed helicopters?

Soon after, the fleeing soldiers were mowed down like grass. After a short while, there wasn't a single one left standing. However, the ones who had remained in place and listened to Zu An kept their lives. All of their faces were deathly pale, and they were overwhelmed with gratitude for their earlier choice.

"From now on, the human army will be led by the Qin brothers and will assist the Bluefield Country Lord in capturing these rebel army soldiers. They will be escorted back to the court and be handled by the Second Empress," Zu An said.

Even though the Qin brothers were still young and didn't have enough qualifications, no one said a single word of criticism against this order.

Meanwhile, Xie Xiu had just supported the Qin brothers back. They saw what had just happened, and glanced at the young women, whose eyes were practically about to turn heart-shaped.

Dammit! This is something I dream about happening to me... when will I be able to show off like this?

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2096: White Jade Sect Up Above

After experiencing what had just happened, the Second Prince's remaining soldiers were especially attentive. They didn't resist in the slightest and allowed Tushan Yu's soldiers to tie them up.

After sending some people to supervise the situation, the rest of the human side began to clean up the battlefield, treat the injured, and do various other tasks. As for King Liang's corpse, he was just collected like the other dead soldiers. No one gave him a second look.

Qin Guangyuan assigned tasks while making sure to send a scouting group to patrol their surroundings to prevent unforeseen accidents.

Zu An nodded approvingly when he saw how clear and orderly everything was. Qin Guangyuan didn't show any negligence, even in this kind of situation where everything was practically over. These were indeed qualities befitting a general. Thus, Zu An left those matters to him and took Tushan Yu back to the tent so she could be treated.

...

In the human camp, Murong Qinghe suddenly said quietly, "That Bluefield Country Lord's relationship with Big Brother Zu is special after all! Her entire body was almost sticking to big brother Zu just now."

Xie Daoyun voiced her agreement, although she seemed a bit disappointed and frustrated.

"Big sister Xie, are you not going to get mad?" Murong Qinghe couldn't help but ask.

"Why would I get angry? I don't even have any right to get angry." Xie Daoyun sighed. "Anyway, that Bluefield Country Lord is really beautiful. If I were a man, it would be really hard for me to refuse her too."

Murong Qinghe nodded and said, "That's true. King Liang looked as if he really wanted to swallow her up."

Xie Daoyun felt even more depressed now. She moved a bit faster so she wouldn't have to listen to Murong Qinghe's chattering.

Murong Qinghe was confused, staring at Xie Daoyun's back as she left and murmuring, "Why do I suddenly feel a bit unhappy too?"

...

Inside the Bluefield Country Lord's tent, Tushan Yu was sitting cross-legged in front. An unending stream of heat was entering through the center of her back. She suddenly said, "Miss Xie seems to like the young master."

"What kind of nonsense are you saying? We're only friends." Zu An sighed. To be honest, it was already quite difficult to say that he and Xie Daoyun only had a friendly relationship. But after experiencing what had happened to Chuyan and Honglei, he really wasn't in the mood to talk about romance anymore.

"Just friends..." Tushan Yu chuckled, clearly not believing him. But when she saw that he didn't want to admit to it, she tactfully chose not to continue discussing the topic. Instead, she said, "Apart from Miss Xie, I think that Miss Murong also likes you quite a bit."

Zu An was stunned, then shook his head and said, "That's impossible. The one she likes is her childhood friend, the Chu clan's third young master. She merely sees me as her big brother."

"Is that how someone looks at a big brother?" Tushan Yu replied with a smile, but she didn't continue. She could tell that even the young lady herself wouldn't necessarily understand what she was feeling right now.

Perhaps the young master enjoys this kind of ambiguous feeling that's neither close nor distant.

A while later, Zu An retracted his hand and said, "Your injuries aren't too serious. I helped you treat them a bit. You should be able to make a full recovery if you rest for a bit."

"Thank you, young master~" Tushan Yu said, blinking as she looked at him.

Zu An smiled and said, "We're not strangers. You can call me 'big brother Zu' or 'Ah Zu'."

"I don't want to. I like calling you 'young master'. That was what I called you the first time I met you, and that's how I'll address you for the rest of my life," Tushan Yu said as she leaned into his chest. She rubbed back and forth like a kitten, and her eyes seemed to be covered in a layer of mist.

A while later, she asked gently, "Is there something that is bothering the young master?"

As the queen of the Fox race, she understood the hearts of men the best. Judging from their earlier interaction, she had quickly discovered that Zu An was brooding over some thoughts. That was why she tactfully chose to stop her teasing, and warmly helped him massage his shoulders instead.

Zu An was truly impressed. Tushan Yu always knew how to help him relax and say the most considerate things. He said, "Some things happened in the sealed land..."

"Can the young master tell this humble one about it?" Tushan Yu asked with an expectant gaze.

That pitiful expression was really hard to refuse. Zu An hesitated, but then he told her roughly what had happened in the sealed land.

At first, Tushan Yu's eyes were sparkling as she listened, but toward the end, she became sad and dispirited, saying, "Big sister Chu and big sister Qiu truly are brave. They really are admirable."

As the lord of a country, she was a bit older than those two young women, but she felt it was incredibly natural to call them older sisters. The address seemed to imply a different meaning too.

"I failed to protect them well," Zu An said quietly.

"Young master, you shouldn't blame yourself. You defeated such powerful alien monsters and saved the entire world. You've already done really well. Those two big sisters are also heroes who saved the world. I don't believe that they would want to see you so dejected," Tushan Yu said, then took out her handkerchief and wiped at the fine sweat on his forehead. "Also, according to

what the young master just said, the two of them haven't truly died. We'll definitely be able to save them."

"That's right. I must save them!" Zu An exclaimed, and his expression became firm.

...

The next morning, Zu An bid everyone else farewell. Now that he had already resolved the matter of the sealed land, the human reinforcement army naturally didn't need to continue heading north. Thus, he had the Qin brothers bring the army back, while Tushan Yu escorted the rebel army to the King Court.

"Where is big brother Zu planning to go now?" Xie Daoyun asked. Murong Qinghe also looked at him with a strange expression.

Everyone in the army had been gossiping about the relationship between Zu An and the Bluefield Country Lord, yet in the end, he'd stayed at Tushan Yu's tent as if it wasn't strange at all. Bluefield Country's guards didn't find it strange either.

Fine, you win. We don't need to gossip anymore.

That old pervert King Liang was doing everything he could to fawn over her, and yet he couldn't even take half a step into Tushan Yu's tent. It seems he never had a chance to begin with.

"I plan to pay the White Jade Sect a visit," Zu An said. When he saw all of their strange expressions, he naturally knew what they were thinking. Even so, he didn't explain why they had slept together, and that they had only purely slept together in each other's arms.

Hmm... Tushan Yu's fluffy tail does feel really amazing, though.

He reflexively cast a sideways glance and saw that Tushan Yu was also looking at him, as if she knew what he was thinking. Her face immediately became red. After all, her tail was her most sensitive spot. She wouldn't even show it normally, let alone allowing someone to touch it. But after what they had done in the sky back then, she could tell that the young master seemed to really like her tail. That was why, even though it was embarrassing, she had still brought out her tail on her own the previous night.

The young master does like it after all.

The only thing she was embarrassed about was that when her tail was being rubbed, she was always unable to hold herself back from making some embarrassing noises.

I hope the young master doesn't think that I'm a lewd woman...

"Is big brother Zu going to visit big sister Chu?" Xie Daoyun asked with a bleak expression.

Zu An voiced his confirmation. Even though he had confirmed that the Snow Lady was Chuyan, he still had to see her for himself. He wanted to see the Chuyan of this world. He could no longer hold back the yearning he felt. After bidding those present farewell, he flew into the sky and disappeared into the distance.

When she saw him disappear, Xie Daoyun felt more and more dispirited. Tushan Yu suddenly arrived at her side and said, "Miss Xie, the young master is currently in a rush to save big sister Chu, so that's why he left so quickly."

Xie Daoyun was stunned, asking, "Save big sister Chu?"

Tushan Yu pulled her to the side and gave her a rough summary of what had happened.

Even though the young master is gentle and considerate, he often still doesn't understand the hearts of women enough. As one of the people at the young master's side, I naturally need to help him out a bit.

This miss Xie clearly likes him so much, I can't let there be a rift between them. I heard that her relationship with big sister Chu is quite good, so the young master probably won't mind me telling her this.

If he really does get angry, at worst, I'll just let him pet it again...

When she recalled last night, she even felt a mysterious sense of expectation.

When she heard about everything that had happened, Xie Daoyun was extremely shocked. So many things had actually happened to Miss Chu and Miss Qiu!

Big brother Zu must be really broken-hearted, and yet I'm throwing a tantrum over here.

Compared to Chuyan and Honglei, who firmly sacrificed their lives to save the world, I'm over here with only romance in my head. I really am small-minded.

Suddenly, ki stirred all around her, as if a streak of light had landed on her. Her aura gradually grew stronger.

Xie Xiu was pleasantly surprised, exclaiming, "Big sister probably gained enlightenment! She actually triggered a resonance with this world!"

Tushan Yu was stupefied.

She actually managed to gain enlightenment like that?

The women around the young master really are too talented, I'm feeling so much pressure here...

A while later, the light around Xie Daoyun disappeared. She slowly opened her eyes, and her gaze no longer carried any trace of the bleakness or dejection from earlier. Instead, it was calm like autumn waters, beautiful and peaceful.

"Thank you, Miss Tushan," Xie Daoyun said with a kind smile, now sounding much more intimate.

"Miss Xie is too polite," Tushan Yu said as she also snapped out of her daze.

The women around the young master's side all have amazing personalities.

When the group scattered, Murong Qinghe secretly pulled Xie Daoyun over and asked, "Big sister Xie, why did your relationship with the Bluefield Country Lord suddenly become so good?"

The two of them had still been criticizing her and gossiping behind her back not too long ago, after all.

"Miss Tushan is a really good person. We just misunderstood her before," Xie Daoyun said, showing her an apologetic smile. She had just made a breakthrough and needed to hurry back to her tent to consolidate it all.

As she watched Xie Daoyun leave, Murong Qinghe pouted. “Hmph, you traitor.”

...

Meanwhile, Zu An rushed toward the White Jade Sect all throughout the night, practically not stopping for any rest. The White Jade Sect wasn't hidden like the Lake of Hatred; all the higher authorities among the humans knew where it was located.

After flying for more than half a month, he finally arrived in the White Jade Sect's vicinity. He unwittingly slowed down as he looked at the beautiful buildings in the clouds. He suddenly felt something similar to the awkwardness of returning to one's hometown after a long time.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2097: Missing

Along the way, Jing Teng had always bothered Zu An whenever there was any free time. At first, Zu An's mood was really heavy and he wasn't in the mood to talk about romance, but in the end, he was no match for Jing Teng's endless pestering.

White Jing Teng was one thing, since she'd considerately had a heart-to-heart chat with him from time to time along the way. But Dark Jing Teng didn't have such reservations when she came out. Whenever she came out, she would blame him for not being trustworthy, saying that he was a liar.

Zu An was really helpless before such criticism, and he was in the wrong to begin with, so he had no choice but to help her replenish the essence she had exhausted.

Eventually, White Jing Teng appeared less and less, while Dark Jing Teng appeared more and more. Zu An was a bit suspicious of that. After all, the two had previously appeared at roughly the same frequency, with neither side having a chance of dominating the other. Why had it become so one-sided?

Is it because White Jing Teng is too embarrassed? Or is it because she hasn't continuously received essence like Dark Jing Teng, causing both sides to fall out of balance?

But these two are clearly sharing the same body...

On several occasions, Zu An had wanted to ask about that, but he always gave up on that particular death-courting impulse.

Sigh, ignorance is bliss.

...

Times of happiness were always short, however. Soon enough, they had unwittingly arrived at White Jade Sect's entrance.

Countless mountain peaks stretched out before Zu An, every single one towering into the sky. The peaks were shrouded in clouds and mist, and atop them were beautiful pavilions and terraces. Looking at them from a distance, it was as if the palaces were built on the clouds themselves.

Zu An even noticed that the highest peak had a large river flowing through it that seemed to surround all of the other peaks. There were many cranes and other birds circling above the water. More importantly, the river flowed completely in midair! He really wondered just how the White Jade Sect had been able to create a river that flowed in the sky like that.

A poem Zu An had once read appeared in his mind.

White Jade Palace up above, with twelve towers and five gates.

Immortals cast blessings from above, binding our hair and granting immortality.

No wonder the White Jade Sect had been able to become such an extraordinary faction among the daoist sects. Now that he was visiting this place for himself, he found that it did indeed deserve its reputation. In the past, he had felt that the Righteous Sun Sect on Violet Mountain was also quite impressive, but there was more of a flourishing sense of prosperity coming from that place, while this location had a more transcendent air, as if they were in the world of immortals. It was no wonder that such a place was able to cultivate individuals like Yan Xuehen and Chu Chuyan.

When he thought about Chuyan, Zu An's expression couldn't help but darken, but as he looked at those distant mountain peaks, he was also full of expectation. After all, perhaps this world's Chuyan was still fine. What happened before had involved a Chuyan from a different timeline...

He stopped when he realized that. Even if she was Chuyan from a different timeline, did that mean he wouldn't save her?

"This is the White Jade Sect's most important location. All idlers are not allowed further!"

Disciples of the sect soon came to chase Zu An away after noticing him pacing back and forth.

"I'll have to trouble you to contact Sect Master Yan. I have some important affairs to discuss with her and wish to request a meeting," Zu An said calmly. He didn't act in an overbearing manner just because his cultivation was high.

"Do you know how many men have wished to meet with Sect Master Yan over the years? Sect Master Yan has already declared that she won't meet anyone. Respected sir, please return," the disciples said as they exchanged a look, as if saying to each other, Another crazy fanatic has arrived.

At first, they wanted to chase Zu An away. After all, they couldn't sense any ki fluctuations from his body. But when they saw that the way he carried himself was different and noticed that there was a mysterious sense of pressure emanating from his presence, they didn't dare to be too forceful.

When he saw that these people were standing in his way, Zu An frowned. He didn't bother arguing with them, and instead hollered straight at the distant mountains, "Sect Master Yan, your old friend has come to see you..."

His voice was clearly not that loud, and yet it echoed between the mountain peaks. Almost everyone present could hear it clearly.

The disciples at the gate were horrified.

How is this person's cultivation so horrifying?

Thank goodness we didn't offend him just now!

Just then, a transparent barrier suddenly appeared on the various peaks, the surface flickering with runes. It turned out the White Jade Sect's main defense barrier had been activated. Boundless radiance surged between the mountains.

Several figures riding on swords arrived from the distance. They had also been really shocked when they heard that voice. Anyone who could accomplish such a thing had to be a rare and powerful enemy. Out of fear that this enemy would attack their sect, the entire sect's most powerful individuals came out at almost the same time.

While they were about to engage the trespasser, someone suddenly exclaimed in surprise, "Isn't that the regent?" Some White Jade Sect disciples had met him previously during the Violet Mountain battle, after all.

Only after learning his identity did the White Jade Sect's experts put away their hostility in embarrassment.

Everyone in the sect knew that he had shown extreme kindness to the White Jade Sect. However, the members of the sect rarely interacted with the court. If they welcomed him in a grand manner, wouldn't that be giving the outside world some misleading signals?

Hold on, he seems to be here for Sect Master Yan?

Hmm, his wife seems to just happen to be Sect Master Yan's personal disciple...

While everyone else was at a loss, a white figure flew over from the distance.

"We pay our respects to the sect master!" Many disciples bowed in greeting.

Many of them sighed in amazement at Sect Master Yan's transcendent presence. Furthermore, for some reason, she seemed to even be a bit prettier than usual.

When she saw that familiar figure, Yan Xuehen's eyes shone with a unique radiance, but she quickly hid it and asked in her usual cold voice, "May I ask what the regent came all this way for?"

"I came here to see you, of course," Zu An replied as he looked at her. Her facial features were like that of a painting, her long hair fluttering behind her and her white dress gently swaying. Her entire being seemed to be glowing.

Yan Xuehen's cheeks immediately turned red.

How can you say something like that in front of so many people? Are you kidding me right now?

Only when she saw that the disciples of the White Jade Sect didn't find it strange did she realize that she was Zu An's senior, as well as his wife's master. If he was seeking her out, it clearly had to be for his wife's sake, so they naturally wouldn't think anything strange.

When she realized that, she didn't know whether to feel happy or sad. She collected her thoughts and said, "Follow me." Then, she turned around and walked up the mountain, looking just as beautiful from behind.

Everyone else was a bit stunned. They were used to Sect Master Yan refusing all the men in this world, and yet today, they'd ended up seeing her let someone through so easily! Didn't this mean that the sect master had already agreed to their saintess' marriage?

Zu An didn't bother trying to figure out what these people were thinking and quickly followed at Yan Xuehen's side. He secretly took her hand. Yan Xuehen was startled and quickly tried to pull her hand back, but he grabbed on firmly and didn't let her.

"Are you mad?" Yan Xuehen exclaimed; her heart was about to jump out of her chest!

There were White Jade Sect disciples all around them. If she was seen holding his hand out here in the open, an uproar among the sect would be one thing, but the White Jade Sect itself could become a joke to the rest of the world! The master had ended up stealing her disciple's man...

"Don't worry, they can't see anything," Zu An said with a chuckle. After the battle with the Shadow Monster King, he'd gained the realization that the Heaven Devouring Sutra could create 'black holes' that distorted space. Light could naturally be distorted too.

The onlookers could only see that the two were walking side by side, while the space between them was blurry. Thus, others wouldn't be able to see much at all.

Yan Xuehen was stunned. She quickly extended her divine sense and saw that she couldn't see from outside after all. She released a sigh of relief before asking, "How are you doing this?"

"I'm merely warping the surrounding space a bit..." Zu An said, then told her a bit about the principles behind the technique.

As she listened, Yan Xuehen's eyes began sparkling. A while later, she said with a sigh, "You really are a cultivation genius after all."

"Of course I'm a genius. How else would I be able to hold your hand?" Zu An replied with a chuckle.

Yan Xuehen's heart was racing. She had never thought that one day, she would be able to hold his hand publicly in the sect. This kind of feeling felt like some sort of taboo, and yet also brought her a sense of indescribable joy.

Still, she said, "This is still the sect, though. Once we go further up, you need to quickly let go of me."

"Didn't you want to walk together with me too? Otherwise, you would have just flown on ahead. Why else would we need to take this small mountain path?" Zu An replied with a grin.

"You...!" Yan Xuehen seemed to have been exposed. She immediately felt embarrassed and panicked.

For some reason, Zu An just really liked to see her embarrassed like this. However, when he remembered his purpose for coming here, he sighed inwardly and gave up on continuing to tease her. He asked, "By the way, is Chuyan okay?" As he asked the question, his voice started shaking a bit.

Yan Xuehen suddenly became silent. A while later, she replied, "Sorry, but Chuyan has gone missing."

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2098: Inner Demon

“What?!” Zu An exclaimed. Even though he'd already been somewhat mentally prepared, he still felt incredibly awful. He asked, “How did she go missing?”

“Follow me,” Yan Xuehen said. Her foot tapped against the ground, and she flew toward the highest peak. This time, Zu An didn't hold her hand, and quickly followed behind her instead.

There were many cultivators who bowed respectfully to Yan Xuehen along the way, and many of them were curious who the man at their sect master's side was. But right now, Yan Xuehen wasn't in the mood to attend to such things at all.

They quickly arrived at the highest peak. After passing through several strictly guarded checkpoints, the two of them arrived at an elevated platform with a mirror-like spatial rift atop it.

Zu An was quite familiar with such rifts. He could tell that it was an entrance into a secret dungeon from a single glance. But right now, the spatial element around the entrance was extremely wild and chaotic, and anything that passed through could be instantly ripped to shreds.

“This is a secret dungeon that our White Jade Sect owns. The natural ki inside is much more abundant than in the outside world, so cultivating inside is far more efficient. Normally, only a few of the most outstanding disciples have the right to cultivate inside. When Chuyan returned from the daoists' secret dungeon last time, she gained a lot of new insights. That was why the sect gave her special permission to cultivate inside the secret dungeon in seclusion,” Yan Xuehen explained, her expression full of worry. “But for some reason, a few days ago, there was suddenly an issue with the secret dungeon. At the time, those with the highest cultivation in the sect sensed that something was strange, so several elders and I entered to look for Chuyan. However, the secret dungeon had already undergone a huge transformation, and Chuyan wasn't where she should have been.

“This secret dungeon isn't that large, so our group quickly searched every corner of it, and yet we didn't find any trace of her. Soon after, the spatial elements in the secret dungeon became more and more violent, and even the inside began to collapse. We were forced to leave.

“A while after that, the spatial elements inside became extremely chaotic. Even heaven-grade weapons would be blasted to pieces instantly by this kind of chaos, let alone human flesh. Thus, we could no longer enter to investigate her whereabouts.”

Zu An asked expectantly, “If even you and the elders couldn't find her after searching the entire place, could it be that Chuyan already escaped before the strange developments took place?”

Yan Xuehen shook her head and said, “That’s not likely. Our secret dungeon is special in that, because it's extremely precious, the peaks all watch this place carefully. We even set up some restrictions in the surroundings, so someone would immediately notice if anyone came out.

“Furthermore, the strangest thing was that Chuyan wasn’t inside, nor did she come out. It’s almost as if she vanished into thin air. I really don’t know what happened.”

Her expression became a bit lost. She was also quite knowledgeable and experienced, but she had never encountered anything like this in her entire life.

“I have an idea where she might have gone...” Zu An said with a sigh. Under her confused gaze, he then shared his experience with the Snow Lady with her.

“How could the Snow Lady possibly be Chuyan?” Yan Xuehen wondered, continuously shaking her head as she listened.

Chu Chuyan had clearly vanished from her secluded cultivation in their sect’s secret dungeon, so how could she possibly appear in the distant Great Snowy Mountain, and become the Snow Lady at that?!

“I know this is really hard to believe, but that's precisely the truth. I could sense that the Snow Lady was none other than Chuyan,” Zu An said. The way Chuyan had looked at him before she disappeared appeared in his mind. He felt as if his heart was being stabbed by a blade.

“I still can’t believe it. We clearly met the Snow Lady before, and she even tried to kill us. That was why we...” Yan Xuehen felt her face heat up. Even though all this time had already passed, she would still feel her heartbeat quicken whenever she recalled what happened back there.

“At that time, she lost her memory and didn’t recognize us,” Zu An said. When he thought about how Chuyan had experienced that endless amount of time all alone, to the point that even her memories were eroded away, he felt incredibly broken-hearted; how lonely and painful that must have been! He continued, “Unless she entered another timeline, how could Chuyan possibly vanish without any reason in your own sect’s secret dungeon?”

As she listened to his reasoning, Yan Xuehen’s face gradually grew paler and paler. She muttered to herself, “How could this be...”

She had always felt as if there was a sword hanging over her neck because of what she'd done with Zu An. What she'd been most scared of was that Chuyan would find out, so she couldn't even look her disciple in the eye.

However, even though that had already happened between the two of them, what she was most worried about right now was still Chuyan’s safety. After all, whether it was Chuyan turning into the Snow Lady, how she had spent that endless amount of time all alone, or how she had disappeared, every single one of those things was a kind of unimaginable suffering.

Yan Xuehen was completely beside herself, saying, “It’s all my fault. It must be the heavens punishing us for committing that taboo act... but even if someone ought to be punished, it should be me! What does it have to do with Chuyan?!”

As she spoke, she coughed out a mouthful of blood. Then, her eyes closed, and she fell straight to the ground.

“Xuehen!” Zu An cried out as he quickly supported her. He discovered that she had fainted, and even her breathing was extremely weak.

He was shocked. He had studied the Unshakable Daoist Manual before and knew how strict the conditions were. Once one cultivated to the level of the emotionless state, one could kill an enemy without them ever detecting the slightest bit of killing intent. However, if the cultivator experienced an intense surge of emotions, they could easily experience a rebound from the technique.

Of course, normally, that was something that would almost never happen. After all, once one's cultivation reached that point, one's mental fortitude and willpower would already be far above everyone else's. There wouldn't be any huge swings in one's emotions.

And yet, Yan Xuehen just had to have met the eccentric that was Zu An. On one hand, she loved him, and yet on the other hand, she was really terrified because he was her disciple's man. As time went on, this inner demon had gradually grown in her originally untainted heart.

Of course, with Yan Xuehen's cultivation, normally such an inner demon wouldn't affect her too much. But when she suddenly learned of Chuyan's tragic fate, she was not only extremely heartbroken, she also felt an incredible sense of guilt and self-blame. When those negative emotions suddenly broke out all at the same time, they'd ended up triggering the latent inner demon. All of her meridians were thrown into chaos, and all sorts of energies flowed in reverse, clashing with each other.

"Sect master!" Several figures flew over. This was an important location of the White Jade Sect, so it was guarded with strict security.

The sect master had brought the regent here, so they couldn't come closer, but they had always been watching from afar. At first, they were curious as to what the usually cold and indifferent sect master would talk about with him, and they had even worried that the sect master's coldness would offend the regent. After all, he was now someone with tremendous authority and cultivation.

And yet, a moment later, the sect master had actually vomited blood and fainted!

"You rat bastard, let go of our sect master right this moment!" Even though they had still been worried about the sect master offending Zu An a moment before, now they weren't even thinking of that at all.

Over the years, Yan Xuehen had accumulated a lot of prestige. Between that and her stunning, transcendent appearance, whether it was the young, middle-aged, or elderly, she'd become the goddess of all their dreams. When they saw that she was suddenly injured, and they couldn't even tell if she was still alive... and that she was in the arms of another man, at that, they couldn't care less whether he was a regent or not.

...

Even though Zu An was receiving a large amount of Rage points all at once, he couldn't bring himself to feel happy at all. Instead, he firmly pressed his fingers against Yan Xuehen's pulse point to examine her condition.

By then, the elder-level figures of the various peaks had also hurried over after receiving news of what happened. When they saw the situation, they drew their weapons and aimed them at Zu An. The situation immediately became extremely tense.

"I didn't do anything to her. She's most likely experiencing cultivation deviation right now," Zu An said. He naturally didn't fear these people, but if there was conflict, the treatment process would become tricky.

"Nonsense! Senior sister Yan's heart cultivation has always been publicly acknowledged to be number one among the past three generations. She even reached the absolute emotionless state. How could she possibly experience cultivation deviation?!" an elder with a goatee loudly cried. Many other members of the sect also spoke up in agreement.

Zu An gave that short elder a look. He hadn't expected Yan Xuehen to actually be this elder's senior sister! He couldn't help but feel strange about that. He said, "I didn't attack her at all, so how could I have injured her? If you all don't believe me, you can examine her yourselves. Hurry and see if you have a way of saving her."

The elders turned to several middle-aged disciples, who had been the ones watching from a distance before, and said, "Report."

Those individuals shook their heads and replied.

"We indeed didn't see him attack."

"Even so, it's hard to say for certain that he didn't use some strange methods to attack the sect master without needing to move."

"For instance, he seemed to have been looking at the sect master the entire time."

...

"Enough!" A white-robed elder who had an elegant bearing shouted at them to stop. If the glorious White Jade Sect Master could be injured to this extent from just a look from another, wouldn't they become a laughingstock to the rest of the world? The elder said, "Elder Qi, please go and take a look."

A middle-aged daoist nun nodded. She arrived at Yan Xuehen's side. Her facial features were quite good, and it seemed that in her youth, she'd been a beauty as well. But when compared to Yan Xuehen, even though the latter was seriously injured and unconscious, she still paled in comparison. She placed her fingers on Yan Xuehen's wrist. A while later, her expression changed and she cried out in alarm, "How could this be?!"

"What is it?" the white-robed elder asked nervously.

"Sect master, she... she..." The middle-aged daoist nun tried to speak several times, but she couldn't speak properly.

The white-robed elder couldn't wait any longer. He extended three threads from his sleeves and placed them on Yan Xuehen's wrist. At their level, using threads to check one's pulse was something that couldn't be simpler. His expression also changed drastically. "Her condition is actually this critical? Even if we manage to save her, she might end up losing all of her cultivation as a result."

"What?!" Everyone present was stunned. Yan Xuehen was White Jade Sect's pride, the most outstanding disciple in centuries. And yet now, she was suddenly going to end up like this?

As soon as he heard that, Zu An cut off the threads and said, "So even after all of that, you're all unable to do a thing. An absolute waste of my time! I'll be the one to save her, then."

After saying that, he prepared to carry her to her nearby personal dwelling.

The White Jade Sect's people were horrified and tried to stop him, exclaiming, "What are you trying to do?"

"Save her, of course. Do you even need to ask?" Zu An snapped impatiently.

"But... Men and women should not touch hands when they give or receive things!" Someone finally found a pretext, and the others nodded in agreement.

Apart from being their sect master, Yan Xuehen was also an extraordinary beauty. How could she be carried into a room by a man? Who knew what he would do!

“Do you all understand what kind of situation we're currently in? Are you just going to watch as she either dies or turns into a cripple?” Zu An shouted furiously.

Everyone present choked up, none of them daring to bear that responsibility. In the end, it was the white-robed elder who said, “In that case, let junior sister Qi enter with you. It'll be good to at least have some extra help.”

He said that it was to help, but it was more for monitoring. None of them felt at ease leaving Yan Xuehen with a man while she didn't have any ability to resist.

“No, my treatment process can't be seen by any bystanders,” Zu An said coldly.

Are you kidding me? If they found out how I'm going to treat her, wouldn't that start a huge scandal?!

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2099: Defenses Penetrated

“How could we possibly allow that?!” Before the white-robed elder even said anything, everyone else already tried to prevent that with shocked expressions.

Are you kidding right now? Do you know what kind of person Yan Xuehen is? Even Zhao Han admired her greatly in the past, and who knows how people yearn for her day and night!

She's normally an unreachable goddess who wouldn't let any man touch even a corner of her clothes, and yet you actually want to stay alone in a room with her while she's unconscious? Keep dreaming!

Whether it was for Yan Xuehen's safety or the sect's reputation, there was no way they would permit something like that.

Zu An was also really annoyed when he heard them continuously tell him to 'stop dreaming'. These were Xuehen and Chuyan's fellow sect members, so he didn't want the situation to become too awkward. He could only remain

patient and explain, "Sect Master Yan is Chuyan's master, and also my... ahem, senior. Could it be that you all think that I would do something disrespectful to her?"

No matter how thick-skinned he was, he still couldn't help but feel a bit embarrassed after saying that.

"Be that as it may, we still don't feel at ease with a man in the same room as the sect master. You didn't agree to us keeping junior sister Qi at her side either, which is really suspicious," the white-robed elder said, starting to become fretful. If it weren't because he was worried about Yan Xuehen's safety and still carried a glimmer of hope, perhaps he would have already sent this guy flying a long time ago.

Zu An said in a serious voice, "The method I am using is a secret method that can only be passed down to a single generation. Outsiders cannot see it."

Elder Qi asked, "Could it be that you are afraid that our glorious White Jade Sect would try to steal your method?"

The surroundings became noisy again. They all said that the White Jade Sect was a sect that had existed for thousands of years and had countless techniques of the highest level, and that they definitely wouldn't covet some other group's random techniques.

While the argument was getting noisier and noisier, a young disciple suddenly stepped forward, saying, "I trust the regent. He definitely wishes to save the sect master and won't do anything disrespectful to her."

Zu An followed the source of the voice and saw that it was actually Lou Wucheng. He had previously been Li Changsheng's personal disciple, someone who was of the same status as Chuyan. They had publicly been known as two stunning talents, but after Li Changsheng's death, he'd suffered too much of a mental setback. Now, he had already become a bit dispirited and wasn't as motivated as before.

"Brother Lou, you're only speaking up as a guarantee for him because he saved you, right?" another disciple retorted with a sneer.

"I vouch for him with a clear conscience!" Lou Wucheng snapped, getting a bit annoyed. In the past, this person had treated him with great respect, but now

that his master had passed, the other person had started going against him because his master was still alive.

The younger disciples split into two sides and argued noisily. In the end, Zu An became impatient and said, "Enough! Just let her come in with me."

He didn't dare to tarry any longer, or else Yan Xuehen would really be in danger.

The White Jade Sect's people all sighed in relief when they heard him agree. He made all of them feel too much pressure, and if he really decided to act up, the consequences would be severe. Now that he had taken a step back, it was perfect for everyone.

Zu An carried Yan Xuehen and walked toward her residence. The middle-aged daoist nun was about to follow him in when the white-robed elder secretly said through ki transmission, "Junior sister Qi, if he tries anything strange, you need to immediately alert us. We'll rush in to help you."

With the other side's cultivation, there was no way junior sister Qi could face him. However, the White Jade Sect was a powerful sect that had existed for over a thousand years, and had countless powerful individuals. When all of them worked together, they didn't need to fear him.

Elder Qi voiced her understanding, then quickly followed behind Zu An.

Zu An carried Yan Xuehen into the room and saw that the layout inside was quite simple. There was only a chair, a spiritual jade bed, and a shelf full of jade strips. It seemed she normally frequently read through all kinds of techniques and skills. Apart from that, there were several vases with spiritual flowers within. They weren't brightly colored, but rather elegant and refined, just like her personality. Other than the fragrance of flowers, there was also a faint delicate fragrance that really refreshed the mind.

When she saw Zu An carry Yan Xuehen to the bed, the middle-aged daoist nun's brows rose. She almost couldn't hold herself back from sounding the alarm. Fortunately, Zu An gently placed her on the bed and got up to leave. He didn't do anything disrespectful, and walked toward Elder Qi instead.

Elder Qi sighed in relief, but at the same time, she found it a bit strange. She asked, "Didn't you say that you had a way to treat Sect Master Yan? Why aren't you starting?"

“I’ll start after dealing with you, of course,” Zu An said with a grin.

The middle-aged daoist nun sensed that something was off and was about to press down on the jade talisman she held, when everything in front of her darkened and she fainted. The last thought in her head was shock. She was a respected elder, for better or for worse, so why couldn't she even stop a single strike from him?

After knocking Elder Qi out, Zu An returned to the bed. This bed was probably the only valuable piece of ‘furniture’ in the room. It was made entirely from spiritual jade, so that even when sleeping, the resting individual would still absorb the world’s natural ki for cultivation. He undid Yan Xuehen's clothes, and the entire room seemed to brighten a bit. Even the beautiful spiritual jade bed seemed to pale in comparison.

Unfortunately, right now, Zu An wasn’t in the mood to enjoy the beautiful sight; instead, he took her tightly into his own embrace. He pressed one hand down on the center of her chest, and the other on her fair and smooth back, to understand her current condition better. He quickly sent primordial ki into her body to help her with the clashing energies within her. Only once the chaotic energies within her calmed down a bit could he start to repair her damaged arteries.

This time, Yan Xuehen’s injuries were especially severe, to the extent that not even the best divine physicians of the world would be able to heal her. Fortunately, not only did he have his primordial ki, he had also learned the Unshakable Daoist Manual and could change his ki to be of the same source as Yan Xuehen’s. That way, the berserk ki inside of her body wouldn’t produce an intense backlash.

He quickly focused his attention and began the treatment.

...

All of the White Jade Sect’s higher ups were gathered outside, and many of them nervously paced back and forth.

“Elder, do you think Sect Master Yan can be treated?” someone couldn't help but ask the white-robed elder.

“The regent sounded really confident, so he should be able to, right...” the white-robed elder said uncertainly. After all, he had examined the state of Yan

Xuehen's body. Even if she was saved miraculously somehow, she would most likely turn into a cripple. Even though the regent was really strong, he wasn't omnipotent.

"I wonder just how he'll save her," another elder said, his expression full of worry.

The white-robed elder gave him a look. He knew that in the past, this man had really tried to chase after Yan Xuehen, but over the years, as his cultivation and age increased, he eventually accepted reality. And yet, how could the passionate time of his youth be so easily forgotten?

He replied, "Don't worry, junior sister Qi is watching inside. If she doesn't alert us, that means the regent didn't treat the sect master with disrespect."

When he realized that he'd been seen through, the elder's face turned red, and so he retreated.

Everyone present looked at the residence in front of them nervously.

...

Meanwhile, inside, Yan Xuehen was also gradually waking up. When she noticed that she was completely naked and that there was a strange feeling coming from her, her entire body immediately went rigid. She was about to prepare for a fight when Zu An said from beside her, "You just experienced cultivation deviation, so don't use your ki."

When she heard that familiar sound, Yan Xuehen sighed in relief. She turned around and gave him a look. Her entire body was already covered in a layer of pink. She murmured, "You... How could you..."

"Hey, big sis, can you please not let your emotions run wild again? Just now, you gave me such a huge surprise that I was left with no other method to save you but this one," Zu An said with a sigh. To be honest, he had almost been sucked dry by White and Dark Jing Teng on the way here, so at first, he really hadn't considered this method.

Yan Xuehen gradually recalled what happened. With her cultivation, she naturally knew how dangerous it was. She sighed and said, "I really didn't expect to have already developed such a serious inner demon. It's honestly all your fault..."

Zu An was speechless, asking, "Didn't I help you get rid of it?"

Yan Xuehen was dumbstruck. However, she suddenly frowned and said, "Chuyan has just gone missing, and yet we're doing something like this. I really am a shameless and bad master..."

When he saw a tear slide down her perfect cheek, Zu An was startled and hurriedly consoled her, saying, "All of this is my fault. You absolutely can't blame yourself! Otherwise, you really might die if you develop another inner demon!"

"If I die, then at least everything will be over," Yan Xuehen said, feeling alarmed when she sensed his movements. She lowered her head and bit down on him before asking, "Why aren't you affected by any inner demons at all?"

Zu An didn't really understand it either. A while later, he said, "It might be because I'm already trash?"

Yan Xuehen was speechless. She felt as if even her teeth were aching a bit from her anger, exclaiming, "You womanizer! You're probably really proud of yourself, thinking that you've obtained both master and disciple, huh? Why would you get an inner demon then?"

Zu An felt wronged and cried out, "It's clearly your cultivation technique that's weird. Why do you have to cultivate something that goes so harshly against human nature?!"

"I was going to fully devote myself to cultivation to begin with. At the time, I figured that it wouldn't matter much even if I abandoned my emotions and desires. Besides, the Unshakable Daoist Manual has faster cultivation speed than other techniques," Yan Xuehen said, giving him a look. "How could I have known that eventually, I would meet a guy like you?"

Zu An was actually a bit proud of himself. He couldn't help but move a bit closer, asking, "Was it so bad to meet me?"

Yan Xuehen's body trembled. She instinctively clutched her own mouth before she suddenly remembered something important. "Right, I remember that when I was unconscious, the sect's people seemed to have rushed over. You didn't kill any of them, did you?"

“No way! How could I touch any of your people? They’re all waiting outside,” Zu An replied.

Yan Xuehen sighed when she heard the first half, but she went rigid when she heard the latter half. She was speechless.

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2100: Haggling

Yan Xuehen was about to go crazy. She felt an incredible amount of guilt precisely because of what had happened to her disciple. That was why she'd experienced cultivation deviation and almost died. And yet as soon as she woke up, she found herself completely naked and lying in Zu An's arms. However, she knew that he had only did so to save her, so she couldn't really say anything.

She'd thought to herself that this had to be the absolute last time. She couldn't continue this sinful relationship. But how could she have known that there would still be a large number of White Jade Sect members standing guard outside?!

When he sensed the shock and nervousness Yan Xuehen's body was signaling, Zu An shivered. However, he still tried to calmly explain, “There was no way around it. Unfortunately, your status is just too high in their eyes, and all of them treat you as their goddess. They wouldn't feel at ease at all leaving you alone with me, and insisted on standing guard outside. They even sent in a female elder to monitor us.”

Yan Xuehen followed his line of sight and saw Elder Qi lying in the corner. She was horrified, asking, “What did you do to her?”

“Don't worry, I merely struck her fainting acupoint,” Zu An replied while guiding her internal energy to move with him.

Yan Xuehen quickly clutched her mouth, while her other hand hit his chest. She was a bit embarrassed. She was now really glad that she'd covered her own mouth and hadn't made any noises even when she was still in a daze. Otherwise, if those outside heard her, she would really want to just disappear forever.

Even so, she really couldn't handle this man's incessant teasing. Not only did he not exercise restraint, he was even going further and further! This fellow seemed to have seen through what she was thinking, and wanted to make her make noise on purpose!

He's really an annoying person!

She reached out to try and push him away several times, but unfortunately, her arms had never felt so powerless.

No, if she really thought about it, she had always been quite powerless whenever he bullied her like this... He really did have some crazy innate talent. In this kind of situation, she had always felt as if her entire body was being completely penetrated from from to end, causing her mind to go blank as if she would faint at any time.

She really was a bit curious how, despite her high cultivation, as well as the amazing strength and flexibility of her body, she still couldn't handle it. Just how had those women with ordinary cultivation survived this thing?

"Are you really trying to heal me or are you deliberately bullying me?" Yan Xuehen asked with a trembling voice.

"I'm treating you, of course," Zu An said. He knew that in her current state, he couldn't be too rough with her, so he became more gentle.

When she sensed the love he was expressing, Yan Xuehen sighed. She held onto him tightly. In the end, she still couldn't refuse him.

Zu An moved close to her ear and said with a smile, "It's okay if you don't hold it in. I already set up a sound-blocking formation. They can't hear anything."

Yan Xuehen's eyes widened.

This guy didn't tell me all this time on purpose!

But she was still grateful that he wasn't the impulsive and hot-headed type. He wasn't someone who would use this kind of opportunity to show his dominance over her in front of the rest of the White Jade Sect.

She grinned. A bit of a stubborn look appeared in her eyes as she replied, "But I don't want to!"

“Then it seems I haven’t been working hard enough.” Zu An harrumphed.

The ki inside Yan Xuehen’s body had already been pretty much sorted out. It was now as calm as a sea, as peaceful as a blue sky with white clouds.

And yet suddenly, it was as if a torrential rain poured down. Wild waves came one after another, not giving her any chance to catch her breath. As time went on, a faint, beautiful song suddenly emerged from the midst of that sea. At first, it was suppressed and the sound was brief, but it gradually became clearer and more wonderful.

Legend had it that there was a kind of songstress in the sea that could draw in sailors with her beautiful song, and then she would lure those sailors and their ships to destruction. However, this song was even more amazing than that, and the person was far more beautiful as well.

“Your... soundproofing... If your soundproofing formation doesn’t work, then I’ll definitely... definitely...” Yan Xuehen struggled to say; her face was completely red, and her eyes were a bit watery.

“What will you definitely do?” Zu An replied as he looked down on her from above while feeling a mysterious sense of success. The goddess who was normally far above in the clouds now seemed to be under his complete control, as if he was responsible for her very life or death.

“I will definitely kill you with a single sword slash!” Yan Xuehen finished as she got up and bit down hard on his shoulder.

“I heard that White Jade Sect Master Yan’s sword technique is amazing. But what do you think of my humble self competing against your sword technique with my spear technique?”

“Didn’t I already help you evaluate your stick technique?!”

“After receiving pointers from Sect Master Yan, I suddenly came up with a new set of spear techniques. I need the sect master to see if there's any other room for improvement.”

“You’re so annoying...”

...

After who knew how much time had passed, someone suddenly knocked on the door. Yan Xuehen shivered, then quickly grabbed her clothes to cover herself.

Zu An looked outside impatiently and asked, "What is it?"

"I wonder how our sect master's condition is right now. Has the regent's treatment gone smoothly?" the white-robed elder asked with some hesitation.

Yan Xuehen thought about how there were many sect members standing guard outside, and yet she'd been here inside speaking nonsense with Zu An. She was so embarrassed she buried her head into his chest. Her hand reached out and gave his waist a pinch.

"Sss~" Zu An sucked in air through his clenched teeth. He loosened up the soundproofing formation slightly and said, "Don't worry, elder. Everything is going well. Your sect master is recovering well and is quite vigorous."

The white-robed elder was stunned.

Why do your words sound so strange?

He quickly asked, "Elder Qi, do you need any help inside?"

Zu An immediately understood what was happening. He knew that the people outside were worried about there being no news even though the three of them had been inside for so long. They naturally wouldn't trust the words of an outsider like him and instead tried to confirm the situation with the middle-aged elder.

Yan Xuehen immediately became nervous. Elder Qi was unconscious right now, so how could she possibly reply? If they thought that something had happened to Elder Qi because they couldn't hear her reply, they would rush in to save her...

She didn't dare to continue thinking about what would happen then. It was just too terrifying.

Zu An moved over to her ear and gently kissed her beautiful earlobe, asking, "What are you standing around blankly for? Hurry and reply already."

Yan Xuehen was stunned.

I really am out of it. I'm already awake, so why would we have to wait for Elder Qi to reply?

As such, she took a deep breath and did her best to calm down, saying, "Elder Ming, I am fine. It is all thanks to the regent for saving me."

When they heard her voice, cheers of joy immediately came from outside. Elder Ming's tone seemed to be happier too as he said, "I am extremely grateful that the sect master is fine. The regent truly is extremely skilled."

Yan Xuehen gave the man behind her a guilty look.

This guy really is extremely skilled in certain aspects.

She quickly said, "My injuries previously were too serious, so right now, the regent is assisting me in repairing my meridians and needs a bit more time... Huh?"

It turned out Zu An had started feeling a bit mischievous when he saw a bit of flirtatiousness in her usually cold eyes...

"What's wrong, sect master?" Elder Ming asked nervously when he heard something strange in her voice.

"It's... It's nothing. Speaking to you just now made my internal energies act up again," Yan Xuehen said, biting her lips tightly. Her beautiful eyes were wide, as if she was threatening Zu An to behave himself.

Zu An looked at her with a smile. He was gentle, yet decisive. Why would he listen to her in this kind of situation?

Yan Xuehen's red lips widened. Fortunately, her cultivation and willpower were astonishing, so she didn't make any sound.

"Then we won't disturb the sect master's treatment any longer," Elder Ming said; he was startled and quickly excused himself. He also had the other sect members move further away.

If they became the reason for the sect master's injuries remaining, that would absolutely be an unpardonable sin.

But why is the sect master's voice shaking a bit?

It's probably because of her injuries.

After all, Yan Xuehen's cold demeanor had left too deep of an impression on them, so none of their thoughts went in that direction.

...

When Zu An sealed the soundproofing formation again, Yan Xuehen's fists continuously struck Zu An. She exclaimed, "Do you really have to humiliate me like that to feel happy?"

Zu An took her tightly into his arms before replying, "How is that humiliation? It's just that you seemed to want to leave me again, so that was why I wanted to completely set you free."

Yan Xuehen immediately became quiet, because she really had thought of this as their last time. She definitely couldn't make this mistake again.

"Chuyan already left me, so I can't let you leave me too," Zu An said, looking at her with a firm expression.

"But I've really let Chuyan down. After what already happened to Chuyan, I can't continue to repeat my mistakes," Yan Xuehen said, clear streams of tears running down her beautiful face.

"I already said that was unrelated to you. What we should focus on the most right now is how we can save her, and not enter a vicious cycle of self-blame," Zu An said with a serious expression.

"We do have to save her, but we can't continue the wrongdoing either," Yan Xuehen said, her expression also firm.

When he saw that her expression this time was different from before, Zu An became silent. After a bit of time, he suddenly undid the soundproofing formation.

"What are you doing?!" Yan Xuehen was startled and quickly sent a voice transmission.

"Since this is the last time, I'll have to make it an unforgettable one," Zu An said, his smile a bit ambiguous.

Yan Xuehen was speechless.

“Are you doing this because you want them to know about our relationship, so that way, I would have no choice but to accept this reality and continue my relationship with you?” Yan Xuehen’s face turned cold as she said, “If that’s really what you think, then I’ll give you what you want! I’ll let everyone in the world know that I’ve already been won over, and then I’ll end my own life to cleanse myself of my guilt toward my sect.”

Zu An seemed to have already anticipated that she would say that and said, “If you end your own life, you might fix all of your problems, but what about Chuyan? Then, everyone in this entire world would mock her for having her man stolen by her master. You don’t want her to become a laughingstock of the entire world, do you?”

“You...!” Yan Xuehen stared at him and asked, “Just what do you want?”

She could indeed choose to end her own life, but if that would only result in such a miserable fate for Chuyan, she would be filled with endless guilt.

“Don’t leave me,” Zu An said as he looked into her eyes.

Yan Xuehen trembled. Even though she was really reluctant, her reason still won out and she said, “No, this is the last time we’ll be together.”

“Then it’ll have to be the last three hundred times. Then, I won’t bother you anymore,” Zu An could only answer her like that.

Yan Xuehen almost laughed in anger. “You can even haggle with this kind of thing?”

“Why not?”

“No way!”

“Then a hundred times.”

“No.”

“Ten times. You can agree to ten times, right?”

“Three times at most!”

“Fine, three times. Deal!”

When she saw his smile that was as crafty as a fox, Yan Xuehen suddenly realized that she seemed to have fallen for his tricks. She was already no longer refusing him as firmly as before. He'd managed to exploit an opening.

Three times, repeat three times; three times, how numerous they are!

But deep inside, she really didn't want to leave him...

At least this way, I'll have an excuse to console myself...

If you find any errors (Ads popup, ads redirect, broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.